

## The Diary of Syngman Rhee

# THE DIARY <sup>1904~34</sup> OF SYNGMAN <sup>1944</sup> RHEE

Edited by Seok-Choon Lew,  
Young Seob Oh,  
David P. Fields,  
and  
Ji Eun Han

---

## Foreword

Since its opening in December 2012, the National Museum of Korean Contemporary History has been working assiduously on numerous scholarly programs that aim to provide a platform for dynamic intellectual dialogue and promote well-balanced research on contemporary Korean history. The museum believes that successful collection of archives, exhibition and education must be preceded by robust research activities. In light of this, our institution has particularly been active in publishing various findings related to Korea's modern and contemporary history.

The museum publishes the cultural series as an effort to give the general public an easy-to-understand material on Korea's contemporary history. Additionally, we publish the academic series that is more geared towards experts and academicians. The aim here is to tackle some of the most important topics in contemporary history and to share our findings with other members of the intellectual community. We also have a translated series, which introduces non-Korean sources from abroad that are relevant to Korea's contemporary history but are not very well-known here at home.

Currently, there is an increased growth worldwide of studies in Korea's modern and contemporary history. Unfortunately, despite this burgeoning trend in Korean Studies, language barriers still act as a significant stumbling block in introducing various findings from overseas to Korea. In light of this, the translated series is an effort to make these non-Korean sources, written in multiple languages, available to Koreans and let the Korean public know more about the numerous scholarly works from around the world.

It is our sincere hope that these series will help the readers look at Korea's

modern and contemporary history from multiple angles, and thereby enrich our understanding. At the same time, I believe this will allow us to raise awareness of formerly unknown sources and further contribute to the on-going intellectual endeavors.

This particular issue is the third translated series, and is about the diary of Rhee Syngman, the first President of the Republic of Korea. What you see in the book is Rhee's hand-written diary from 1904 to 1934, and 1944. His diary, which was written in English, contains detailed accounts of not only Rhee's personal life and activities, but also the lives of various freedom fighters and what they were confronting at the time. Simply the fact that this is the first-hand account of the nation's very first president makes it a very crucial asset for studying Korea's modern and contemporary history. For this reason, we worked very hard to compile this into a useful resource for the intellectual community, and decided to publish the Korean translation along with the English original and edited English side-by-side. I hope this will help the historiography of modern and contemporary Korean history to further leap forward.

My thanks go to the editors and reviewers, who were in charge of the translation and putting all the materials together for this series. We hope this will be an enjoyable read, and we also ask for your continued support.

Kim Wang-sik

Director

National Museum of Korean Contemporary History

---

## Foreword

This book is a compilation, translation, and reprinting of the diary written in English by Dr. Syngman Rhee, who was the founding President of the Korean Provisional Government, established in the Shanghai French Concession in 1919, and the Republic of Korea, established and recognized by the United Nations in 1948. With the publication of this book, a major lacuna is filled in the series of works published since the donation of the Syngman Rhee Papers to Yonsei University. These papers were previously in the care of Francesca Donner Rhee, the first First Lady of the Republic of Korea, and Dr. In Soo Rhee and Ms. Hae Ja Cho, Dr. Syngman Rhee's adopted son and daughter-in-law. This donation was made possible by the efforts of M.D. Byung Soo Kim, the 13th President of Yonsei University, Professor Young-ick Lew, the founding Director of the Institute for Modern Korean Studies, matrix of the Syngman Rhee Institute, Samsung Group, and Ms. Song-ok Choi.

Prior to the publication of this diary, *The Woo Nam Syngman Rhee Papers in Oriental languages* (18 vols) was published in 1998, *The Syngman Rhee Telegrams* (4 vols) was published in 2000, *The Syngman Rhee Presidential Papers: A Catalogue* was published in 2005, and *The Syngman Rhee Letters in Oriental languages* (3 vols) and *The Syngman Rhee Correspondence in English* (8 vols) were published in 2009. With the publication of Rhee's diary, the fundamental materials with which we can trace his long journey from 1904 to 1944 have become publicly available.

The academic contributions made by the participants of this project, Dr. Young-Seob Oh in the Syngman Rhee Institute, David Fields, Ph.D. candidate at the University of Wisconsin, and Ji-Eun Han, Ph.D. candidate at Yonsei University,

are to be highly esteemed, I would like to thank Ji-Yoon Yoo, de facto secretary general at this institute, for her thorough work in the administrative process. I also thank Kyu-Eun Kim from Underwood International College at Yonsei University, for her translations that helped compare the Korean and English versions.

This diary publication project was pushed by the founding Director of the Syngman Rhee Institute, Professor Seok-Choon Lew, whose passions and efforts are to be acknowledged. Dr. Wang-Sik Kim, the director of the National Museum of Korean Contemporary History, recognized the public significance of Syngman Rhee's diary and supported the co-publication of this book. Last but not least, I am grateful to many, including Yonsei President Jeong Gap Young, who have helped either directly or indirectly with this publication.

October 2015

Myongsob Kim, Professor, Ph. D.  
Director, The Syngman Rhee Institute, Yonsei University

---

## Introduction

Syngman Rhee's life was emblematic of the shifts of the long 20th century, which saw the transformation of traditional societies into modern ones, colonies into nation-states, and a diffuse international system into a new world order divided between two ideological, economic, and military rivals. Rhee was born into one world and died in a different one. He was born in a world of muskets and died in a world of nuclear weapons. He was born in a Korean kingdom ruled by the same royal dynasty since 1392, whose policy of isolation was only beginning to erode. He died the founder of a tenuous Korean democracy, which owed its existence to a coalition of foreign nations who rescued it from certain destruction.

Rhee was not a passive observer of these shifts, but an active participant in them. His early political career would be made as an anti-monarchist agitating for a radical modernization of the Korean state and liberal rights for the Korean people. Following Japan's occupation of Korea in 1905 he would join the global ranks of anti-colonial nationalists, pressing for the rights of small nations and colonized peoples. He haunted international conferences from the margins—the only space open to him—seeking self-determination for Korea. He secured an audience with President Theodore Roosevelt just prior to the Portsmouth Peace Conference in 1905, asking American support for Korea's independence. As the newly elected president of the Korean Provisional Government (KPG), he tried desperately, along with leaders of dozens of other colonized peoples, to travel to Paris in 1919 to represent Korea's claim to independence at the Paris Peace Conference. In 1921 he argued from outside the Washington Naval Conference that peace in East Asia was impossible with the Japanese controlling Korea. In 1933 he was at the League of Nations in Geneva urging an effective collective response to the Japanese invasion of Manchuria. He was on the margins of the San Francisco

Conference in 1945, asserting incorrectly that a secret pact at the Yalta Conference had sold out Korea to the Soviets, but correctly that there would be no unity between Korean nationalists and Soviet-trained Korean communists.

This latter assertion became a self-fulfilling prophecy in post-liberation Korea, as Rhee emerged as the preeminent nationalist leader, partially because of early American support, but largely because of his unwavering opposition to trusteeship for Korea—an opposition not shared by Korean communist leaders. Rhee's decision to pursue statehood for the southern half of Korea rather than compromise with Korean communists is still a divisive issue in Korean politics. His critics hold him responsible for making what was to be a temporary division of Korea permanent and for the subsequent war that accomplished nothing but the deaths of millions of Koreans and hundreds of thousands of others. To his supporters Rhee's unwavering opposition to communism and founding of a separate state saved over half of the Korean population from the ongoing nightmare that has become North Korea. While most of his supporters are quick to acknowledge his many shortcomings as a leader and lament his descent into authoritarianism, they also assert that the liberal institutions established in the constitution of the Republic of Korea laid the foundations for South Korea's later development into a full democracy. Neither Rhee nor any other Korean leader is solely responsible for the Korean War, or for the subsequent Cold War that events on the Korean peninsula did so much to shape. However, it is no exaggeration that the repercussions of Rhee's decisions, amplified and modulated by his Korean, American, Chinese, and Russian contemporaries, continue to reverberate around East Asia, the United States, and, through various alliances, much of the rest of the world.

Relative to his importance, Rhee has been neglected by scholars. Studies of Rhee in Korean tend to be either overly sympathetic or overly critical. Those that transcend this division have not found their way into English. A comprehensive English-language biography of Rhee is yet to be written. The nearest approximation, Robert T. Oliver's two volumes on Rhee, are useful in their descriptions but lack a critical eye and scholarly analysis—Oliver was Rhee's publicist and close friend. A handful of thematic studies have contributed to our understanding of Rhee, particularly his early life, but much more work needs to be done.

The publication of this diary will hopefully invigorate scholarly interest in Rhee by offering a much more precise picture of Rhee's activities during his nearly forty-year exile in the United States. However, the publication of this diary will no doubt be met with some measure of disappointment, due to what it does not contain. It is unarguable that Rhee's reputation and legacy were made in the last two decades of his life, 1945–65. During this period he emerged as one of the most important figures in post-liberation Korea and as first president of the Republic of Korea. Sadly, as is explained further below, these years of Rhee's diary are not extant. Also not extant are all but one of the crucial years between 1939–45, when Rhee worked diligently but unsuccessfully in Washington, D.C., to convince American policymakers to recognize the KPG, then headed by Kim Ku.

Also largely absent from the diary are Rhee's personal thoughts. Even events as personal as the death of his only son and courtship and marriage to Francesca Donner are recorded in a matter-of-fact way. Little of Rhee's inner life is revealed. This was by design. Rhee himself referred to this record as his "logbook" and likely viewed it primarily as a record of what he did and whom he met. However, he occasionally was unable to resist the sadness of a parting (18

April 1933), the frustration of being a diplomat from a nonexistent nation (1 September 1944), or the happiness of being reunited with his fiancé after a long separation (4 October 1934).

While what is missing is keenly felt, what the diary reveals is no less important to understanding Rhee, modern Korean history, and the development of U.S.-Korean relations. First, this diary reveals in unprecedented detail how Syngman Rhee, and his fellow compatriots, struggled to regain Korea's independence during the Japanese occupation. This story is far less known or understood outside of Korea, but forms the prologue to the division of the Korean peninsula and the Korean War. For nearly forty years Rhee used the explosive growth of Christianity in Korea and Theodore Roosevelt's alleged violation of the 1882 Korean-American Treaty to make a compelling argument for Americans to support Korean independence. Rhee claimed Koreans were inspired by the American liberal state, wanted to emulate it, and deserved assistance in doing so not only because of treaty obligations, but for moral, strategic, and religious reasons. Rhee found many Americans receptive to that message. They ranged from politicians, such as Eleanor Roosevelt, Fiorello LaGuardia, and Wendell Willkie, to authors and thinkers, such as Pearl Buck and Albert Einstein. Perhaps more crucially Rhee's message resonated with thousands of average Americans who supported Rhee and the Korean cause in small ways: Americans such as the Harbaughs, who opened their home to Rhee and his son when Rhee was struggling as a poor student and single father in 1905, or Lizzie G. Starks, Rhee's benefactor who followed him to Hawaii to teach at his Korean Christian Institute, or Fred A. Dolph, who served for years as the legal counsel to the Korean Commission in Washington, D.C., with little remuneration. For forty years Rhee's lobbying, both inside and outside of Washington, D.C., built a coalition of American supporters whose sympathy

for Korea played a frequently overlooked role in the American commitment to Korea after 1945—codified in the 1953 mutual defense treaty. This was done with hardly a protest from the American people, despite a traditional antagonism to “entangling alliances” and notable opposition to past and future American interventions in Asia (i.e., The Philippines and Vietnam).

Second, while it has long been known that Rhee utilized American missionary networks for personal and political support during his exile, his diary shows just how valuable these were to him, especially during his early days. They allowed him to support himself as a lecturer and hone his rhetorical skills in hundreds of churches and missionary gatherings. They secured him an outstanding education. Being an alumnus of Harvard and Princeton not only enhanced his reputation among Americans and Koreans, but also gave him invaluable connections to prominent Americans—most notably Woodrow Wilson. It was undoubtedly Rhee’s connection with Wilson that resulted in Rhee’s being chosen as the first president of the KPG in 1919 from among a crowded field of other potential Korean leaders.

Finally, the diary shows the various strategies and methods Rhee used to advocate for Korean independence during his exile. He has frequently been criticized for focusing too narrowly on diplomacy with the United States and neglecting military training and other strategies for regaining Korea’s independence. In fact, Rhee’s activities were broader than diplomacy. In his 1904 manifesto, *The Spirit of Independence*, Rhee laid out a vision for reclaiming Korea’s independence that could be summarized as “reform from within and protection from without.” He attempted to do both during his years in exile. Reforms would only come through education, a cause to which he would devote many years of his life in

Hawaii through founding the Korean Christian Institute, which he hoped would produce the next generation of Korean leaders. In seeking “protection from without,” Rhee was certainly focused on the United States—probably because he saw the most potential there—but he did not neglect diplomacy with other nations. The record of Rhee’s eight months in Europe in 1933 reveal him working hard to bring Korea to the attention of not only the great powers, but also to representatives of small states, and anyone who would listen. His mission to Moscow seeking Soviet support for Korean independence is especially noteworthy considering the reputation for extreme anti-communism he would earn later in his life. This trip is all the more interesting because of Rhee’s more-than-casual contact with socialists in the United States. Laurence Todd, Rhee’s first publicity agent, Charles Edward Russell, his partner in publishing the *Orient*, and John Haynes Holmes, the minister who co-officiated his wedding, all identified as socialists at various points in their life. Todd even served as the Washington correspondent for the Soviet TASS news service in Washington, D.C., until 1952. Articles on Korea by Rhee and associates, such as Pearl S. Buck and Robert T. Oliver, also appeared in the leftist magazine, *The New Leader*, in the 1930s and 1940s. That Rhee would find allies among American leftists is not surprising; historically the American left has been much more inviting to non-whites. Rhee certainly had his own thoughts on communism. As early as 1923 he condemned communism in his *Pacific Magazine*, and in 1941, just prior to Pearl Harbor, he included the Soviets, along with the Germans and Japanese, as examples of totalitarianism that threatened to enslave humanity in his book *Japan Inside Out*. But prior to 1945 Rhee was no ideologue when it came to finding allies for an independent Korea.

The charge that Rhee disparaged military struggle as a part of the Korean independence

movement is also an over-simplification. Prior to 1941 Rhee did not support using the resources of the Korean independence movement for military action, which led to confrontation with other Korean leaders, especially Park Yong-man. He reasoned that the Korean independence movement lacked the ability to mount anything but a quixotic military action against the Japanese. However, his opinion changed once the United States entered the Pacific War and there was the possibility of American training and weapons for Korean fighters. He worked closely with OSS Deputy Director M. Preston Goodfellow to create a program for training Korean saboteurs and sought Lend-Lease Aid for the KPG. Neither of these endeavors were especially successful, but they show Rhee's strategic adaptability as a leader of the Korean independence movement.

Although this diary is a valuable record of Rhee's life for the years it covers, it is far from comprehensive. Some very important events are either only mentioned or are entirely absent from his diary, such as his meeting with President Theodore Roosevelt (1905), the March First Movement (1919), or his impeachment from the Korean Provisional Government (1925). Readers wanting to get the most out of this publication would do well to read it in conjunction with the secondary literature on Rhee and alongside publications of Rhee's personal papers: see Young-ick Lew, ed., *The Syngman Rhee Correspondence in English, 1904–1948*, 8 vols., Seoul: Institute for Modern Korean Studies, Yonsei University, 2009; and Young-ick Lew, ed., *이화장 소장 우남 이승만 문서*, [Ihwajang sojang Unam Yi Süng-man munsö], 18 vols., Seoul: Institute for Modern Korean Studies, Yonsei University, 1998.

#### Composition and Provenance of the Diary

This publication of Rhee's diary is a composite of four documents all written in English:

three original daybooks and a contemporary typescript. Rhee kept his diary in dozens of small notebooks over the course of his life. Only three are extant: his 1944 daybook, "Daybook 5," and "Daybook 7." Daybooks 5 and 7 cover most of the period when Rhee was in Geneva in 1933. Sometime between 1934–47, Rhee had a typescript (hereafter and in the annotation referred to as "the typescript") made of his daybooks covering the years 1904–1934. Exactly when this typescript was made, why it was made, and who made it are unclear. A memo placed in the typescript (Appendix 2) tallying the years Rhee spent in the United States up to December 1940 suggests that the typescript might have been made around that time. Another memo in Rhee's personal papers from the Korean poet and author Seo Jeong-ju, dated November 1947, indicates that Rhee had loaned Seo the typescript, probably in preparation of Seo's biography of Rhee, *Unam Yi Seungman Jeon* (우남 이승만전), which would not be published until 1995. The same memo also indicates that there was a second typescript, probably covering the years from 1935 until sometime in the 1940s, but this is no longer extant. Taken together, these memos indicate that the typescript might have been completed as early as 1940, but was certainly completed by 1947.

Rhee edited the typescript in his own hand, adding explanatory notes, providing the hangeul and hanja names for some individuals mentioned, and occasionally correcting typographical errors. Rhee's editing was not thorough. Many errors were either missed or allowed to remain. It appears that at least one other person also made minor edits to the typescript. Handwritten edits to the typescript have been placed in angle brackets, as is explained below.

Because the typescript overlaps with Daybook 5 and Daybook 7 the editors have been able to gain some insight into how it compares with Rhee's original daybooks. It is clear that some

editing took place. The creators of the typescript inserted missing pronouns and occasionally tried to correct Rhee's grammar, although not always successfully. For example in Daybook 5 the entry for 4 January 1933 reads: "At Paris changed the plane and left at 11 a.m." The same entry in the typescript reads: "At Paris I changed plane and left at 11 a.m." Such corrections are common for entries in 1933 and presumably throughout the rest of the typescript. However, because Rhee read this typescript, edited it, and presumably approved it, the editors have accepted the typescript as an authentic updated account of Rhee's daybooks and have allowed it to take precedence over Daybook 5 and Daybook 7 when minor differences in wording occur. More significant discrepancies between the typescript and the daybooks are addressed in footnotes.

A pressing issue for the editors has been accounting for the missing years of the diary between 1935–43, and 1945 until the end of Rhee's life. The fate of these missing years is unknown, but likely these documents were lost during either one of two catastrophes to strike Rhee's personal papers. The first was the fall of Seoul on 28 June 1950, only three days into the Korean War. The suddenness of the North Korean attack forced the Rhee administration to make a chaotic retreat from Seoul. Much was left behind including many of Rhee's papers. These papers were later used by North Korean and Soviet diplomats as propaganda in debates over the Korean situation in the United Nations General Assembly in October 1950. Presumably these papers are still in Pyongyang. It is conceivable that the missing years of Rhee's diary may be among them. The second catastrophe to strike Rhee's papers was his forced resignation in April 1960, which precipitated another chaotic departure, first from Gyeongmudae, his official residence, and then from Seoul two weeks later. He took few of

his personal papers with him. What was left behind ended up scattered in various locations around Seoul and in Rhee's presidential retreat in Jinhae, South Gyeongsang Province. Later Rhee's adopted son, Rhee In-soo, succeeded in recovering thousands of pages of Rhee's papers, both personal and official, but the missing years of Rhee's diary were not among them. There is also ample evidence that Rhee continued to keep a diary during his presidency, although it was probably kept by a private secretary rather than Rhee himself. His biographer, Robert T. Oliver, quotes from it occasionally in his book *Syngman Rhee and American Involvement in Korea*. Its whereabouts are unknown.

### Editorial Policy

The composite nature of this document necessitated different editorial policies for the typescript (1904–34) and the 1944 daybook. Even though the typescript was partially edited by Rhee, it still contains numerous typographical errors and misspellings. These have been silently corrected, as it is impossible to know whether these errors appeared in the originals or were introduced by the transcribers. However, the editors have decided not to correct grammatical errors in the typescript, as a way of acknowledging that Rhee was not a native speaker of English. The editorial policy for the year 1944 is more literal: all handwritten entries have been transcribed without correction. Editorial insertions into the text are used sparingly and enclosed in square brackets. Speculative readings are enclosed in square brackets with a question mark. In order to call attention to the handwritten edits that Rhee and others made in the typescript, they have been placed in angle brackets. Other marginalia, such as explanatory notes, have been converted into internal footnotes and referenced in the text with super-

scripted letters (a), (b), (c), etc.

The abundance of names in this diary, written in English, Korean (hangeul and hanja), and Chinese, posed a significant challenge. Names written in hangeul and hanja in the text have been modernized and then transliterated in footnotes according to the Revised Romanization of Korean system. Chinese names have been romanized according to the Pinyin system. Korean names that were romanized by Rhee in the text have not been altered. In the annotation, the traditional East Asian order of putting the family name first has been observed. Alternate names and/or alternate romanizations known to have been used by an individual have been placed in parentheses preceding the person's birth and death dates in the annotation. Elsewhere in the annotation the Revised Romanization system has been used except in cases where traditional spellings are firmly established (e.g., Pyongyang, Syngman Rhee) or in the citations of Korean publications, as most library catalogs still use the McCune-Reischauer system.

Bilingual readers will no doubt realize that the English annotation and the Korean annotation do not correspond directly (e.g., the contents of footnote 100 in the English version do not correspond to footnote 100 in the Korean version). There are three reasons for this. First, Rhee's use of hangeul and hanja names in the text necessitated their transliteration in footnotes in the English version, but not in the Korean translation. Second, many explanatory footnotes that were necessary in the English version were not necessary in the Korean version and vice versa. Third, even where the subjects of a footnote correspond, the Korean and English versions are not strictly speaking translations of each other. Oh Young-seob and David Fields each annotated in their native languages and then checked their work against

each other's, incorporating relevant information. As a result, neither version is a translation of the other, but rather a harmonization of the two versions.

### Acknowledgements

The editors would like to thank the many individuals who helped make this project possible. Dennis Choi and Alexander Brauer, working with David Fields, read every word of Rhee's diary aloud to ensure the faithfulness of this publication to the original texts. Jonathan Reid closely edited the English annotation for consistency, clarity, and style. John Kaminski, the dean of documentary editors, freely gave of his expertise on numerous occasions as the editorial policy of this work took shape.

---

**CONTENTS**

**Forward**

Kim Wang 

Director, National Museum of Korean Contemporary History · 4

**Forward**

Myongsob Kim, Professor, Ph. D.

Director, The Syngman Rhee Institute, Yonsei University · 6

**Introduction** · 8

**CHAPTER 1**

1904~1918 · 22

**CHAPTER 2**

1919~1932 · 88

**CHAPTER 3**

1933~1934 · 164

**CHAPTER 4**

1944 · 264

**APPENDIX**

1. A Record of the Dates of Trips made by S. Rhee Since Nov. 1904.
2. How Long Have I Been in the United States up to date, Dec. 3, 1940?
3. A Letter of Introduction Written on Rhee's Behalf by Missionary James S. Gale in Nov. 1904.

1904~  
~1918

## CHAPTER 1

1904

November 1 

We left Seoul at 1 p.m.

November 5

The S.S. Ohio sailed out at 3p.m. but on account of unfavorable wind stopped somewhere throughout the night. At day break she sailed out again and continued all day.

November 6

At 6 p.m. we reached Mokpo where I landed alone and went to the church. I met Dr. and Mrs. Owen, Messrs. Bell, Preston<sup>1)</sup> and Kim Hung Kin<sup>2)</sup> and several others. I telegraphed home and posted letters and cards.

November 7

At 3 p.m. we sailed again and it was a very peaceful and pleasant voyage.

November 8

At 9 a.m. we reached Fusan<sup>3)</sup> and went ashore to the Governor's office where Governor Yi Moo Yung asked me to wait for dinner. From there we went to Cho Ryang and had lunch at Choi Yu Bung's.<sup>4)</sup>

1) Clement C. Owen (오기원, 1867 - 1909), Eugene Bell (배유지, 1868 - 1925), and John Fairman Preston (변요한, 1875 - 1975) were Southern Presbyterian medical missionaries who founded numerous schools and hospitals in Jeolla Province, Korea, especially in the cities of Mokpo and Gwangju. Owen's wife, Georgiana Whiting, was Rhee's first English tutor.

2) Possibly a misspelling of the Korean name "Kim Hung Rin."

3) Busan.

4) A wealthy local businessman.

At 7 p.m. we left Fusan.

November 9

At 6:30 a.m. we anchored at Shimonoseki, but did not land.

At 1:30 p.m. we sailed again.

November 10

At 3 p.m. we landed at Kobe and came to Mr. S.H. Choi's house.<sup>5)</sup>

November 11

At 11 p.m. we went to Mr. Logan<sup>6)</sup>, the cousin of Mr. Bell, from there to Mr. Cort where we met Dr. Hardie<sup>7)</sup>. We received ₩100.00 from Cort who said the telegram had been received two days before. In the afternoon we saw Mr. Song and others.

November 12

We walked around the town and went up to Sushiyama.

November 13

At 9 a.m. I went to Mr. Logan's Chapel and delivered a speech. In the afternoon we went on the "Gaelic" and said good-bye to the people going to Hawaii.

5) Choi Sang-ho would serve as secretary of the YMCA in Seoul and as vice-secretary and treasurer of the Korean YMCA in Japan. In 1914, Rhee invited Choi to Hawaii to assist in his mission work with Koreans.

6) Possibly Charles A. Logan, a Southern Presbyterian missionary to Japan.

7) Robert A. Hardie (하리영, 1865 - 1949) was a Canadian medical missionary credited with leading the Wonsan Great Revival (1903) which spread across Korea until 1907. He served as president of Hyeopseong (Union) Methodist Seminary (now Methodist Theological University, 감리교신학대학교) in Seoul, 1913 - 22.

## November 16

At evening went on invitation to the supper at Mr. Yama's. \$1.15 gold was bought at a Chinaman's exchange house.

## November 17

Two tickets were bought at ¥126; one for Howard Leigh<sup>8)</sup> <리중혁(Choong Hyuk)> the jailor's brother.

At 4:30 we went on board the "Siberia."

## November 18

At 6 a.m. We left Kobe.

## November 19

At 6 a.m. we reached Yokohama.

## November 20

At 3 p.m. we left Yokohama.

## November 25

Said to be two days.<sup>9)</sup>

## November 28

At 10 a.m. passed by a small island.

8) Leigh (Lee) was the younger brother of Lee Jung-jin, the vice-chief of Hanseong Prison where Rhee was incarcerated from 1899–1904. Under Rhee's influence both Lee brothers converted to Christianity. The elder Lee probably paid part of his brother's and Rhee's traveling expenses from Seoul.

9) Rhee crossed the International Date Line on this day.

## November 29

At 7 a.m. we anchored at Honolulu, the Port of Hawaii. The quarantine officers came on the ship and examined all the passengers. The ship drew close to the wharf where I got a pass to land while none of the steerage passengers is admitted. When I was trying to land there Mr. Pak Yun Sup, the interpreter to the American Immigration Co.<sup>10)</sup>, came on board to meet me. He informed me that the friends in Hawaii had heard of my coming two days beforehand and sent circulars to the different places gathering a large meeting to receive me.

Dr. John W. Wadman the American missionary of the Methodist Church, with several Korean friends would come out to get the pass for me fearing that I could not get it without aid. Anyhow we went to the Korean Church where oh, so many loving friends were met. In the evening we all went by train to the Ewa Church<sup>11)</sup> in the Korean plantation, 12 miles from Honolulu. About 200 Korean Christians were gathered to have Lord's Supper. Dr. Wadman presided. Ten Christians were baptized. Dr. Wadman said our work here is so wonderfully growing and the wireless telegraph of the Holy Ghost informed to our brother Lee.<sup>12)</sup> So that he has come long ways from Korea to partake this Sacrament Service. We would like to keep him with us but as he is on the way to America we will wait till he comes back and then we will catch him etc. etc.

After that I gave a long speech until nearly 11 o'clock and sang a national song. After the service was over, we took supper and slept there at about half past two with P.K. Yoon<sup>13)</sup>.

10) Pak, a translator for the U.S. Bureau of Immigration.

11) Ewa Korean Methodist Church.

12) "Lee" is another way of romanizing Rhee's surname.

13) Yoon (윤병구, 1880–1949) was a pastor and Korean independence activist. Yoon organized Korean immigrants in Hawaii into a branch of the New People's Association and represented Korean nationalists on diplomatic missions to the U.S. in 1905 and The Hague in 1907. In August 1905, together with Rhee, Yoon secured an audience with President Theodore Roosevelt in which they unsuccessfully sought the president's assistance in securing Korea's independence.

## November 30

At 6:30 a.m. back to the town. We took breakfast in town and had another good meeting there. The friends subscribed \$30 gold for our fare. There I gave a speech then we went on board the "Siberia" at 11:30 which left the [port] at nearly 1 p.m. Many friends came out to bid us farewell, waving hats and handkerchiefs on the wharf until quite invisible.

## December 4

Evening. A tea party where I made a speech.  
About 9 p.m. a ship passed by.

## December 6

At 10 a.m. anchored at San Francisco and landed at 3 p.m.  
We came to the Japanese hotel "Oisoya & Miji" 401 Stockton St. A room with double bed 50 ¢ one night. Meal from 10 ¢ upward.

## December 8

Came to Mr. <Jung Soo> Ahn's<sup>14</sup> 475 E. 12th St., East Oakland.

## December 9

Mr. Ahn and I slept at Mr. Fish's 614-5th Ave. San Rafael.

## December 15

We left two Korean coins at the Golden Gate Park Museum.

14) Ahn (안정수, b. 1879), with P.K. Yoon, founded the Korean Methodist Church in Hawaii. He became president of the New York Korean Mutual Aid Society (뉴욕한인공제회), 1907, and served as chairman of the New York branch of the Korean American Culture Association (재미조선문화회), 1926.

## December 16

Mr. Vail bought the train ticket from Southern Pacific Railway Company at half fare (\$53.75) from San Francisco to Washington through Chicago.

At 5:30 p.m. we left San Francisco.

## December 17

At 12 p.m. we came to Los Angeles. Mr. <Hugh H.> Cynn<sup>15</sup> came out to meet me.

## December 19

At 11 a.m. we were trying to start but at request we postponed.

## December 25

We made speech in the church.

## December 26

At 8 p.m. I started for Washington through the Santa Fe Line.

15) Hugh Heung-wo Cynn (신흥우, 1883-1959) was a friend of Rhee from childhood. Both Rhee and Cynn attended Paichai School in Seoul and were incarcerated in Hanseong Prison in 1899 for their reformist activities. Cynn was released a year before Rhee and travelled to California for study. He returned to Korea as a Methodist minister, eventually becoming the principal of Paichai School. In 1920, Cynn published *The Rebirth of Korea*, which provided a detailed account in English of the March First Movement. He served as secretary of the Seoul YMCA, 1930-35.

## December 30

At 9 a.m. reached Chicago. Saw Dr. Matzinger the pastor of Campbell Park Presbyterian Church, and gave Dr. Underwood's letter.<sup>16)</sup> At 3 p.m. I took the train of the Pennsylvania Line.

## December 31

At 7:30 a.m. changed the train at Pittsburgh.

At 1:45 p.m. reached Harrisburg and changed car at 2:50 for Washington.

At 7 p.m. reached Washington, D.C. in the same night I found the Korean Legation and Dr. Hamlin<sup>17)</sup>, the pastor of the Covenant Presbyterian Church.

16) Horace Grant Underwood to P.F. Matzinger, 4 November 1904, in Young-ick Lew, ed., *The Syngman Rhee Correspondence in English, 1904–1948*, vol. 4 (Institute for Modern Korean Studies, Yonsei University, 2009), 35–36. (Hereafter as *Lew, Rhee Correspondence in English*.) Underwood (1859–1916), one of the earliest American missionaries to Korea, founded and served as the first president of Chosen Christian College (now Yonsei University) in Seoul, 1915–16. He also helped to found the Seoul YMCA. Underwood was among the missionaries who aided Rhee during his incarceration. He took part in creating the first English–Korean dictionary and translating the Bible into Korean. Subsequent generations of the Underwood family also served as missionaries to Korea.

17) Teunis Slingerland Hamlin (1847–1907). Some sources have mistakenly identified him as Lewis T. Hamlin.

## CHAPTER 1

1905

## January 1

At 12:30 p.m. I saw Hamlin at his Church and took dinner at his home. In the evening I took supper at the Legation. Attended two churches.

## January 2

I found Dr. Verbrycke, Pastor of the Gurley Memorial Presbyterian Church at his residence 2307-1st St., N.W.

## January 6

At 6 p.m. \$2.00 From Dr. Hamlin.

## January 7

At 5 p.m. Moved from Mt. Vernon Hotel 487 Pa. Ave. to Mr. W.H.H. Smith's 2122 H. St.

## January 8

At 5 p.m. \$3.00 from somebody through Dr. Hamlin. I made two speeches, one in the Chapel of morning Bible Class and one in the Christian Endeavor Society<sup>18)</sup> in the evening—all at Mr. Smith's church.

18) The Young People's Society of Christian Endeavor, a nondenominational evangelical association founded in 1881.

## February 12

Sunday. I was invited to speak at the Gurley Memorial Church at 11 a.m. and they contributed \$12.79 for helping my study.

## February 20

\$6.00 were sent from the Legation to pay for the room.

## March 26

Lectured at the Hamline M.E. Church.<sup>19)</sup>

## April 2

Sunday at 6:30 lectured at the Metropolitan Baptist Church.<sup>20)</sup> Mr. Lorence gave me \$2.00.

## April 23

Easter Sunday baptized at the Church of the Covenant.<sup>21)</sup>

## May 31

Wednesday evening at 8 p.m. gave a lecture at Metropolitan Presbyterian Church. \$3.00 for carfare.<sup>22)</sup>

19) The following sentence, which was typed into the typescript at a later date, appears at this point: "Easter, Sunday morning, I was baptized by Dr. Hamlin at the Church of the Covenant, Washington, D.C." See 23 April 1905 for the accurate record of Rhee's baptism.

20) A historically important African-American church founded by freedmen.

21) This entry was placed between 26 November and 1 December in the typescript.

22) The entries 4 June through 2 August were placed at the end of 1905 in the typescript. They have been moved to their correct position.

## June 4

Sunday evening. Mr. Harbough came to take Taisanah with him.<sup>23)</sup>

## June 6

Both Taisanah and I came to Mr. Harbough's 320 A St. S.E.<sup>24)</sup>

## June 19

Came to Ocean Grove, N.J. leaving Taisanah in Washington, \$5.00 and round-trip ticket received from Dr. Hamlin.

## June 29

\$15.00 money order from P.K. Yoon.

## July 12

\$5.00 received from Bishop Fitzgerald.

## July 13

\$10.00 received from Dr. Gamewell<sup>25)</sup> in the exhibit for giving lectures to the visitors.

23) Taisanah was the nickname given to Rhee's only son. As was Korean custom, Rhee entered into an arranged marriage at the age of fifteen. This union produced one son, Rhee Bong-su (이봉수), who was born the same year Rhee was imprisoned. In an interview with the *Washington Times*, Rhee claimed that his son arrived unexpectedly and that for two months he and his son had lived in a single room in a boarding house. He requested the *Washington Times* to help him advertise for a suitable Christian home for Taisanah. Rhee explained that he was not giving up his son for adoption; the arrangement would only be temporary. George W. Harbaugh and his wife agreed to take Taisanah into their home. Their only child, Sadie B. Harbaugh, was a missionary to Korea. See "Taisanah Rhee Finds New Home", *Washington Times*, 6 June 1905; and "Korean Boy Happy in His New Home", *Washington Times*, 11 June 1905. In both articles Rhee's name is romanized as "Sung Mahn Rhee."

24) After one evening with Taisanah the Harbaughs decided to take in Rhee as well.

25) Possibly Francis Dunlap Gamewell (1857-1950), a missionary to China who became famous for defending the foreign legations during the Boxer Rebellion. Gamewell served as secretary of the Open Door Commission of the Methodist Episcopal Church's Missionary Board and regularly organized missionary exhibits around the United States.

July 14

\$1.75 given by several ladies in the Association Hall after speech.

July 14

Came to New York.

July 18

Came back to Ocean Grove, N.J.

July 27

Came to Philadelphia, Dr. Jaisohn's,<sup>26)</sup>

July 28

Came to Washington.

July 31

Went to Philadelphia to see Jaisohn and wrote Mr. Yoon just the same day he came.

August 1

Returned to Washington.

August 2

Came to Philadelphia again.

---

26) Philip Jaisohn (서재필, 1864 – 1951) was Rhee's former teacher at Paichai School and a well-known Korean reformer who lived much of his life in exile in the United States. From 1919–22, he worked closely with Rhee in organizing the Korean independence movement in the United States. Jaisohn managed the Korean Information Bureau, edited the *Korea Review*, and served as interim chairman of the Korean Commission in Washington, D.C., 1921–22. He returned to Korea in 1945 as an adviser to the American Military Government (AMG) in Korea. Jaisohn was the first Korean to receive U.S. citizenship.

October 10

Spoke at the Cadenville Presbyterian Church, \$5.00 beside expenses.

November 5

Spoke at the Y.M.C.A., Camden, N.J. when collecting money for Mr. Brockman<sup>27)</sup> the Y.M.C.A. Secretary for Korea. They gave me \$5.00 beside all expenses. There I spoke at the 1st Presbyterian Church.

November 13

Spoke at the Georgetown Central Union Mission.

November 15

Spoke at the Metropolitan M.E. Church to the International Association.

November 26

Spoke at the Union M.E. Church in the morning and one M.E. Church S.W. of the city in the evening.

December 1

Spoke at the N.Y. Presbyterian Church.

December 3

Spoke at the Calvary Baptist Church to the Chinese Bible Class.

December 5

11:30 a.m. First Congregation Church, cor. 10th and G Sts.

---

27) Francis (Frank) Marion Brockman (1887 – 1929), a YMCA missionary to China and Korea.

## December 6

11 a.m. First Presbyterian Church, Madison St. Baltimore, Md. \$9.00 privately given through Mrs. M. Wylie 818 Park Ave. 8 p.m. \$15 privately offered through Rev. Donald Guthrie, Pastor.

December 10<sup>28)</sup>

7 p.m. Epworth League<sup>29)</sup>, Foundry M.E. Church,

## December 13

Spoke at the First Baptist Church, cor. Thomas Circle 20 Minutes. \$7.40 free offering.

## December 15

1:30 p.m. Trinity M.E. Church.

## December 17

7:30 p.m. Sunday. Brightwood Park M.E. Church, Pastor E.C. Powers. \$9.97 free offering.

## December 24

Sunday evening. Spoke at the Brookland Baptist Church.

28) The following entries for December were out of order in the typescript. They have been placed in the proper order.

29) A Methodist young adult association with chapters across the U.S. and Canada.

## CHAPTER 1

1906

## January 3

Spoke at the Central Union Mission.

## January 7

Saturday. Spoke at the Metropolitan M.E. Church.

## January 8

Spoke at the 4th Presbyterian Church—Women's Foreign Missionary Society—\$2.00 were given by the Society.

## January 14

10 a.m. at the Foundry Church and at 4 p.m. at the Hamline Mission.

## January 19

\$2.45 received from the Brookland Church for speech.

## January 21

Sunday evening. Spoke at the Wesley Chapel M.E. Church, 7th and G Sts. N.W.

## January 26

Spoke at the Presbyterian 4th Church, Mt. Pleasant. \$3.00 were offered by the leader.

## January 28

Sunday evening, spoke at Waugh M.E. Church.

## February 4

Sunday morning, spoke at the Georgetown M.E. Church.

## February 11

Sunday evening, spoke at Y.M.C.A. and the regular service of Keller Memorial Lutheran Church—9th St. and Md. Ave. N.E.

## February 18

Sunday evening, spoke at the Brightwood M.E. Church in the League<sup>30)</sup> service and in the regular service.

## February 25

Sunday evening, spoke at the Riverdale Presbyterian Church. \$5.00 given by Mrs. Vile.

## February 25

7 p.m. Taisanah passed away at the Municipal Hospital, Philadelphia, Pa.

## February 26

Funeral took place at 5 p.m. in the Oddfellow Cemetery.

Record: while in bed (24th) fasting two days trying medicine for tape worm. I received a telegram at 11:30 p.m. stating: "Your son Taisanah is seriously ill. The Nation, Philadelphia."

<sup>30)</sup> Probably the Methodist Epworth League.

I went directly to the Railway station and found out that the train for Philadelphia would leave in about two hours and half. Hurrying back to the telegraph office and sent a telegram, "Must I come Now? Answer immediately." To the Nation. The prompt answer says "Resting easier, I have written will write again, Nation." Being much relieved by it, I intended to wait for the letter.

At about 2 p.m. Sunday the 25th another telegram reached saying: "Taisanah very ill, come at once to 1520 Arch St." Mrs. Boyd<sup>31)</sup>. I telegraphed to Mrs. Boyd telling her that I was leaving Washington at 9:30 which I did. At 2:30 a.m. the 26th I reached Mrs. Boyd's. She said Taisanah had been ill for three days and the Doctor said it was diptheria, a dreadful epidemic disease. So he was sent to the Municipal Hospital where no one was allowed. If I should go in to see him, the quarantine law would confine me in the hospital for a month, at least. I said I would be confined. She said I might get in in the morning then. Spending the rest of the night at station, all efforts were failed to go in. At 11 o'clock a.m. a letter from Miss Murphy in the Western Home 41 & Baring Sts. said Taisanah had passed away at 7 p.m. the 25th. Oddfellow Cemetery, Broodenberks St. Philadelphia.<sup>32)</sup>

## March 4

Sunday evening, spoke at the Presbyterian Church further down at Riverdale where Mrs. Vile's home is. Collection \$28.00. The little Ellis presented a little envelope 25 ¢ in it with a note: "With love to Mr. Rhee from the youngest boy Ellis."

## March 11

Spoke at Berwyn Presbyterian Church. \$5.43 received and 15 ¢ from little Ellis for carfare.

<sup>31)</sup> Mrs. E.E. Boyd of Philadelphia and Ocean Grove, New Jersey. Boyd would regularly host Rhee at her summer cottage in Ocean Grove.

<sup>32)</sup> Taisanah was reinterred in Lawnview Cemetery, Rockledge, Pennsylvania.

March 18

Sunday evening. Spoke at Lakeland Colored Baptist Church. \$1.00 was given.

April 15

Sunday evening. Spoke at the Trinity M.E. Church, Alexandria. \$2.00 by the Pastor for carfare.

April 20

Spoke at the Y.M.C.A. at the banquet and closing exercise of the Educational Department.<sup>33)</sup>

April 22

Sunday evening. Spoke at the West Presbyterian Church, Georgetown. \$3.00 given by the Missionary Society.

May 2

Wednesday evening, spoke at the Berwyn Presbyterian Church. \$2.00 carfare.

May 8

Spoke at the Rust Hall National Training School, Missionary Convention.

May 13

Sunday evening. Spoke at the Riverdale Presbyterian Church. \$10.00 afterwards.

33) Rhee's address was briefly covered in the Washington, D.C., *Evening Star*. See "Progress the Watchword", *Evening Star*, 21 April 1906.

May 15

Tuesday night. Spoke at the Missionary exhibit at the Brookland Baptist Church.

May 29

Sunday evening, spoke at the Temple Baptist Church.

October 14

Spoke at the Epworth League of Brightwood Park M.E. Church.

October 28

Spoke at Hyattsville M.E. Church. Collection \$1.47.

November 25

Sunday evening. Spoke at the Metropolitan Baptist Church. \$5.00 received.

December 10

Sunday afternoon. Spoke at the North Eastern Temple, Y.M.C.A. branch office, Washington, D.C. \$5.00 received from Mr. Arnold, the Secretary.<sup>34)</sup>

December 14

Friday. Spoke at the meeting of missionary service at M.E. Church women's society.

December 23

Sunday evening. Spoke at Clarendon M.E. Church. Mr. Rives, preacher.

34) The *Washington Herald* reported that a "full attendance" was expected for this lecture, which testified to Rhee's growing popularity as a speaker. See "Every Inch A Man", *Washington Herald*, 9 December 1906.

## CHAPTER 1

1907

January 1

Spoke at Young Women's Christian Temperance reception, 6th & E. Sts.

January 22

Spoke at the Howard University Wednesday meeting at the request of the President Thirkield.

April 7

Sunday. Spoke at the Clarendon M.E. Church in the evening service.

April 28

Sunday evening service at the Epworth M.E. Church.

April 30

Spoke at the annual dinner of Y.M.C.A. Educational Department.

May 25

Sunday evening, spoke both at the Epworth League and the Church service at Calvary M.E. Church, Georgetown.

May 27<sup>35)</sup>

Wednesday. Spoke at the American Adventist Convention in Boston.

June 2

Spoke at the Conference of women's Crittenton Society<sup>36)</sup> at Brown's Memorial Church Baltimore.

June 5

Graduated from George Washington University. Received B.A.

June 9

Sunday morning. Spoke at the Gurley Memorial Church, Children's Day.

June 12

Illustrated lecture at Y.M.C.A. Washington, D.C.<sup>37)</sup>

June 21

Sunday. Preached morning and evening in the Eatontown Second Adventist Church. \$14.00 were given from the Church Treasury, Eatontown, Near Long Branch, N.J.

August 13

Saturday. Spoke at Women's Foreign Missionary Conference at Ocean Grove.

35) The entries from 27 May to 22 December were out of order in the typescript. They have been placed in the proper order.

36) Probably Crittenton, Inc., an American reform society founded in the 19th century.

37) Both the *Washington Post* and the *Evening Star* publicized this lecture, explaining that it would be illustrated with slides. The newspapers also reported that health problems had nearly prevented Rhee's graduation from George Washington University, but his "indomitable faith and will" triumphed over the illness. See "Program of Y.M.C.A. Events", [Washington, D.C.] *Evening Star*, 9 June 1907; and "Will Lecture at YMCA", *Washington Post*, 10 June 1907. The *Washington Times* reported that Rhee's lecture drew "several hundred" people and that he received a standing ovation. See "Syngman Rhee Lectures on Korea at Y.M.C.A.", *Washington Times*, 13 June 1907.

December 10

Spoke at the First Baptist Church, Cambridge, Mass.

December 15

Spoke at the Sunday School of Campbell Park Presbyterian Church, Chicago. Also spoke at the State St. M.E. Church Epworth League Service and Spoke at the Y.M.C.A. dinner service.

December 16

Monday at the Presbyterian Preachers Meeting at the Masonic Temple as Korean delegate.

December 22

Sunday. Prayed and spoke at the Sunday School service at Brooklyn M.E. Church.

## CHAPTER 1

1908

March 11

Spoke to the International Missionary Convention at Pittsburgh, Pa. 3,000 delegates were present. C.T. Wong of China also spoke.<sup>38)</sup>

March 12

Spoke at the South End Presbyterian Church prayer meeting. \$17.15 received as free collection.<sup>39)</sup>

October 11

East Genesee Presbyterian Church Sunday morning service Syracuse, N.Y. Memorial Presbyterian Church, Sunday evening service.

October 12

Address to a special meeting with Mr. Sideltham and Dr. Underwood on Awakening of Korea, Syracuse, N.Y.<sup>40)</sup>

38) Rhee's speech, "Korea's Humiliation, Christianity's Call", was printed in *The Church and Missionary Education: Addresses Delivered at the First International Convention Under the Direction of the Young People's Missionary Movement of the United States and Canada* . . . (New York, 1908), 107-9. This speech provides a rare example of Rhee's early lectures.

39) The following entry, which was typed into the typescript at a later date, appears at this point: "August, Finished M.A. Course in Harvard." Rhee completed his coursework at Harvard in the summer of 1909. He received his M.A. on 23 February 1910, as he recorded below.

40) In 1908, Horace G. Underwood was touring the U.S. and lecturing on the Korean Pentecost of 1907 (평양대부흥). Underwood hoped to secure greater support for missionary work in Korea. Rhee joined him at several stops on the tour.

## October 24

Sunday a.m. Westminster Presbyterian Church, Rochester, N.Y. Three times in the morning.

Memorial Presbyterian Church. Spoke with Dr. Avison<sup>41)</sup> in the evening.

## October 25

Parlor meeting in the evening with Dr. Underwood and Mr. Hulbert<sup>42)</sup>.

## October 26

Brick Presbyterian Church in the afternoon with Drs. Avison and Underwood. Parlor meeting with Drs. Avison and Underwood.

## October 27

Newton Presbyterian Church with Dr. Baird. \$5.00 received.

All the above meetings for the Missionary Campaign and so all the money raised went toward the movement but this one meeting was a side meeting and the \$10.00 given to both of us was divided.

Central Presbyterian Church in the evening with Dr. Underwood.

All the above meetings from Oct. 24th up to 27th were held at Rochester, N.Y.

41) Oliver R. Avison (1860–1956), a Canadian medical missionary to Korea, was a teacher at Chosen Christian College and Severance Medical College. These institutions combined to form Yonsei University in 1957. At Rhee's request, Avison cut off Rhee's topknot while he was a student at Paichai School. Avison also aided Rhee during his incarceration, sending him medicine during a cholera epidemic. He served as an officer in the Christian Friends of Korea, a pro-Korean lobby, during the 1940s.

42) Homer B. Hulbert (1863–1949), an early missionary to Korea, was a scholar and activist for Korean independence. A confidant of Korean Emperor Gojong (1852–1919), Hulbert twice acted as his secret envoy, carrying messages for President Theodore Roosevelt in 1905 and to The Hague in 1907. After being expelled from Korea, Hulbert promoted Korean independence as a lecturer and writer. At Rhee's invitation, Hulbert returned to Korea in 1948. In 1950, he was posthumously awarded the Order of Independence (건국훈장 독립장) by the Republic of Korea (ROK).

## October 28

Calvin Club, Princeton Seminary.

## November 1

Sunday. Bethany Presbyterian Church, Phila. With three Princeton men and Mr. E.F. Hall<sup>43)</sup> raising money for Korea.

## November 11

Wednesday. Walnut St. Presbyterian Church, West Phila., Dr. Dana, Pastor. Received \$11.77 evening prayer.

## November 17 [18?]

Wednesday. Hartsville Presbyterian Church, Toyland near Phila., received \$7.00 for expenses.

## November 27

Friday. Women's Foreign Missionary Society at Dr. McWilliams residence Pastor of Calvary Presbyterian Church Euclid Ave., Cleveland, Ohio.

## November 29

Eel's Memorial Church. Spoke for Korea propaganda. Dr. Underwood's movement, Cleveland, Ohio. Woodland Church (Presbyterian) Sunday morning service. Mr. Severance's<sup>44)</sup> Church (Hospital). Lakewood Ave. Presbyterian Church Sunday evening service. Cleveland, Ohio.

43) Korea. He influenced Rhee's decision to continue his studies at Princeton instead of Columbia University after a year of graduate coursework at Harvard.

44) Louis Henry Severance (1838–1913), a member of the Standard Oil Trust whose philanthropy was instrumental in founding Severance Hospital, Seoul.

## December 2

Tioga Presbyterian Church, North Phila. Dr. Dunn, Pastor \$10.00 received, excluded the both way fare.

## December 4

Friday. 5th Presbyterian Church, Trenton, N.J. Illustrated lecture, Mr. Hodge<sup>45)</sup>, the brother of Prof. Hodge<sup>46)</sup>, being the pastor of the church operated lantern.

## December 6

Sunday 5th Presbyterian Church, Trenton, N.J. spoke to the Sunday school rally. \$1.00 received for carfare.

## December 9

Wednesday. 2nd Presbyterian Church, Germantown, Phila. Stereopticon lecture. Received \$17.65 and entertained over night. Mr. Henry Lee, Pastor.

## December 14

Sunday. Olivet Presbyterian Church. Preached Sunday morning. Received \$5.00 from Harvey Klaer, Pastor.

Sunday evening. Preached at Bath Presbyterian Church. Received \$6.50 from Seth Russell Downie, Pastor.

## December 18

Friday. Princeton Theological Seminary Junior Class Preaching.

45) Samuel C. Hodge.

46) Richard M. Hodge, a professor at Union Theological Seminary.

## CHAPTER 1

1909

## January 3

Sunday. Spoke at Sunday school and evening service. Yardville Presbyterian Church, Yardville, Pa. \$5.00 as regular pay for Pastor.

## January 6

Methodist Church, Princeton. Spoke at the Union Prayer meeting. Three churches together.

## January 7

South St. Presbyterian Church. A stereopticon lecture for Friday service. \$19.41 received from the collection. Alexander McCall, pastor.

## January 10

Bethany Presbyterian Church Sunday School, introduced by Mr. Wanamaker, Phila. Sunday evening. Temple Presbyterian Church, Mr. Robert's Church, \$11.00 received afterwards.

## January 21.

Stunt night at Calvin Club, Princeton Seminary. "Holiday experiences."<sup>47)</sup>

47) The Calvin Club was an "eating club" at Princeton Seminary. "Stunt night" probably referred to an evening of student-led entertainment, when selected students were expected to amuse their colleagues with poems, stories, musical performances, or other similar diversions.

## January 24

Southwestern Presbyterian Church Sunday morning service. McHenry, Pastor. \$5.00 sent afterwards.

Sunday evening service at Abbington Presbyterian Church Williams, Pastor. \$3.00 offering.

## January 26

Tuesday night Princeton Theological Seminary Y.M.C.A. "A Message from Korea."

## February 28

Sunday. Trenton Junction Presbyterian Church, evening service for Mr. Landes—\$5.30.

## March 11

Wednesday. St. Paul's Presbyterian Church, West Phila. Dr. Miller, Pastor. Entertained by Mr. Lewis. \$10 received.

## March 21

Sunday a.m. Prayer meeting. Hodge Hall, Princeton Seminary; address on Korea.

## March 24

Wednesday. Spoke to the Women's Foreign Missionary Conference at Mifflin, Pa.

## March 25

A short address to the same Conference. Miss Lowrie of Warriorsmark, Pa. Chairman, Dr. Hills, the Pastor of the Church (Westminster) presided.

## March 28

Sunday 4:30 p.m. Bryn Mawr College, Bryn Mawr, Pa. Spoke to the Y.M.C.A. at Cha-

pel; Miss Deaws, the Chairman. \$5.00 for gift.

Sunday evening—spoke to the 23rd Anniversary of Christian Endeavor at Tenth Presbyterian Church at 17th & Spruce Sts., Phila. Dr. Marcus A. Brownson, the pastor. \$20.00 including expenses and a bouquet of flowers by the audience.

## April 4

Spoke to the morning service, raising money for the work in Korea. Cards for subscription for Korea distributed after the address, hoping to get \$600.00. The Market Square Presbyterian Church, Germantown, Pa. Herbert Hezlep, the pastor. \$5.00 besides expenses.

Sunday evening—spoke at Westside Presbyterian Church, Germantown, Pa. Potter Lee, Pastor. \$7.50 received.

## April 7

Wednesday. Spoke to the Women's Missionary Society at First Presbyterian Church, Trenton, N.J. Miss McIlvaine, Chairman. \$6.94 received.

## April 11

Easter Sunday—spoke in the morning at Peck Memorial Chapel, Mr. Henry (to go to China as Missionary) was the Pastor. Washington, D.C.

Evening—Concord M.E. Church. Merritt Earl, Pastor.

## April 14

Wednesday—spoke at Langhorne Presbyterian Church, Langhorne, Pa., Past, Pastor. \$8.00 received.

## April 24

Sunday evening—spoke to Christian Endeavor Second Presbyterian Church, Princeton, N.J.

May 11

Spoke to the Parlor meeting at Mrs. Stryker's house 321 W. State St. Trenton, N.J. Miss McIlvaine entertained.

May 12

Wednesday—spoke at West Presbyterian Church, Wilmington, Del. spoke for the pastor Alex Alison using stereopticon \$14.00 without RR fare but entertained.

May 16

Sunday a.m.—spoke at First Presbyterian Church, Trenton, N.J.—Sunday School. \$50.00 from Miss McIlvaine for the services.

Evening—spoke at Yardville [New Jersey] for Midkiff, a Princeton student.

May 31

Spoke at First Congregational Church, Asbury Park, N.J. to the Florence Crittenton meeting<sup>48)</sup> at the request of Mrs. Barret.

June 2<sup>49)</sup>

Stereopticon lecture to the Women's Foreign Mission Convention at Clarion, Pa. \$51.25 received including expenses. \$10.00 more later.

June. 10

Spoke at Presbyterian Church, Morrisville, N.J. Mrs. Burgess, chairman, Mr. Ferry, pastor. \$2.00 received.

<sup>48)</sup> Probably Crittenton, Inc.

<sup>49)</sup> In the typescript, this entry came before the previous one.

June 16

Wednesday evening—spoke at the 2nd Presbyterian Church, Princeton, N.J. Rev. Campbell, pastor.

July 12

Speech to Harvard Summer school association annual meeting.

September 22

Wednesday. M.E. Church, Princeton, N.J.

October 25

Princeton Theological Seminary, Sunday morning missionary meeting. I led the meeting at Hodge Hall Parlor.

November 3

Wednesday. First Presbyterian Church, Trenton, N.J. (afternoon meeting) stereopticon lecture \$12.00.

Evening—Westminster Presbyterian Church. Mr. Rollinson, leader. \$4.00 for expenses.

November 7

Fourth Presbyterian Church, West Philadelphia.

Morning at Young People's Meeting, Sunday School, Primary Dept. and mass meeting in the afternoon.

Evening service, Dr. Doyle, the Pastor. Mr. Cunningham made the engagement and Mrs. Bowen entertained. \$15.00 received.

November 14

Sunday morning—Second Presbyterian Church Sunday School, Princeton, N.J. Mr. Buyer, leader.

November 17

Wednesday Prayer meeting—Second Presbyterian Church, Princeton, N.J. Mr. Campbell, Pastor.

November 23

Spoke to the Special Union meeting of Mission Band and prayer meeting at Lambertville Presbyterian Church, Lambertville, N.J. entertaining over night by Mrs. Swan. Mr. McKubbin, Pastor. \$15.00 collection.

December 2

Thurs. evening—led the Mission Class and spoke about political situation, Princeton, N.J.

December 20

Sunday Evening—Lutheran Church, Chestnut Ave. Trenton.

December 21

5th Presbyterian Church—Trenton—Boys Dept. —Hodge, Pastor \$1.00 carfare.

## CHAPTER 1

1910

January 5

St. Paul's Presbyterian Church, W. Phila. Dr. Miller's Church; Mr. Lewis entertained—\$10.00.

January 9

Clinton Ave. Baptist Church—spoke to Bible School and evening church service; entertained by Mr. Conklin, Pastor. \$3.00 carfare.

January 10

First Presbyterian Church, Princeton, spoke to Ladies' Missionary Society.

January 27

Spoke at 2nd Presbyterian Church, Trenton. Mr. Albert C. Busch, Pastor. \$2.00 for expenses.

January 30

Sunday—spoke at 2 churches—Columbus, N.J. McMartin, Pastor.

February 10

Wednesday—Spoke to missionary meeting at Morrisville Presbyterian Church, N.J. Mr. Sairie's Church.<sup>50)</sup>

<sup>50)</sup> Probably the Morrisville Presbyterian Church in Morrisville, Pennsylvania, pastored by the Rev. E.T. Ferry.

## February 20

Spoke morning and evening Sunday services Presbyterian Church, Allentown, N.J. George Swan, Pastor. \$15.00 without carfare.

## February 23

Received M.A. from Harvard University.

## March 6

Sunday—spoke evening service, East Trenton Presbyterian Church, Fred B. Newman, Pastor.

## March 13

Spoke at 2nd Presbyterian Church, Bridgeton, N.J. Rev. Beadle, Pastor. \$5.00 Sunday morning service.

Spoke to Sunday school in the afternoon.

Sunday evening—spoke at West Presbyterian Church, Bridgeton, N.J. stereopticon lecture. Rev. Joseph Lyons Ewing—Commerce & Giles Sts.

## March 20

Sunday evening—Pilgrim Chapel—Trenton. Mr. Midkiff, Pastor. \$1.50 expenses.

## March 25

Friday. Miss Angie Brearly's residence Mission Study Class—403 Market St. Trenton, N.J. 2nd Church, Mr. Busch, Pastor. \$2.00 for expenses.

## April 6

Wednesday. First Church, Presbyterian, Princeton, Dr. Beach, Pastor. Stereopticon lecture—United with 2nd Presbyterian Church. \$20.00 received.

## April 10

Sunday—preached morning and evening at the Presbyterian Church. Jones, Pastor. \$10.00 received.

## April 17

Preached at the 2nd Presbyterian Church—Sunday morning service at which the First Church invited Rev. John Blair Edmondson, Pastor. Evening Collection \$21.77 Belvidere, N.J. Afternoon spoke at the First Presbyterian Church. Mr. Bruen, Pastor. His son in Taiku.<sup>51)</sup>

## April 23

Saturday evening. Led the 8th Ave. Mission, N.Y. Miss Ray, leader.

## April 24

Open air meeting in front of Metropolitan Building. Spoke for Miss Ray.

Parlor meeting in N.Y. International Bible Club. Y.M.C.A. W. 23 St. N.Y. Epworth League Meeting. M.E. Church. 24th St. near 9th Ave. N.Y. \$2.50 for R.R. fare.

## April 25

Spoke to a special meeting in First Presbyterian Church, Germantown. Dr. Jennings, Pastor. \$10.00 received.

## May 4

Wednesday. Spoke at Consolidated Presbyterian Church, Sheppard, Pastor.

<sup>51)</sup> Henry Munro Bruen (1874–1955), a missionary to Daegu, Korea.

May 6

Spoke to Christian Endeavor meeting, Presbyterian Church, Trenton, N.J.

May 22

Sunday—Spoke at the Brookland M.E. Church for Mr. Powers, Pastor, and at Western Presbyterian Church in the evening, Washington, D.C.

Book for World's Sunday School Convention.

June 17

Spoke at 3rd Presbyterian Church.

June 19

Sunday—spoke at Rock Creek Church, Pocomoke City, Md. —in the morning at Sunday School and at evening service. W.J. McCullough, Pastor. \$11.00.

June 29

Spoke at the Union Church, Princess Bay, Staten Island, N.Y. Philip Landes, Pastor, Collection \$11.00.

July 5

Wednesday. First Presbyterian Church, New Brunswick, N.J. W.W. Knox, Pastor. \$7.00 received.

July 10

Spoke at Mr. Hoffman's Church, Phila. Morning service. In the evening spoke at the Lighthouse at 146 High Ave. Phila.

July 11; 12; 13; for boys.<sup>52)</sup>

July 17

Spoke to Sunday school in Presbyterian Church at Pocomoke. Sunday evening at M.E. Church, Dr. Murry, Pastor. Dr. G.H. Jones<sup>53)</sup> had been here.

In the afternoon spoke at McCullough's country church. In the evening at Presbyterian Church.

July 18

Received Ph.D. from Princeton University.

Sep. 3

Left N.Y. on S.S. Baltic for Liverpool. Sailed to Europe on the way home.

November 27

Sunday. Three men stood up for Jesus in Mr. Yi Sang Choi's<sup>54)</sup> Bible Class Sunday afternoon in the Seoul Y.M.C.A. building.

December 11

Twenty-two men gave their names and addresses desiring to receive baptism during the Christmas holidays. Eleven different churches were mentioned as their preference.

52) Rhee possibly spoke at a camp or meeting for boys on consecutive days.

53) George Heber Jones (1867–1919), a scholar and Methodist missionary to Korea. Jones co-founded *The Korean Repository* (1892–98) and *The Korea Review* (1901–06).

54) Probably Yi Sang-jae (이상재, 1850–1927), a notable Korean reformer and Christian leader. Along with Rhee, Yi was a founder of the Independence Club and was incarcerated with Rhee in Hanseong Prison. Both Rhee and Yi converted to Christianity while imprisoned. After Yi's release he became a leader in the Korean YMCA and was the first chairman of the Singanhoe (신간회), a broad-based Korean independence organization active in Korea from 1927–31.

## December 12

Received by names of the Y.M.C.A. day school students who have decided to receive baptism.

(From October, 1910 to March, 1912 I was in Korea).<sup>55)</sup>

<sup>55)</sup> After finishing his Ph.D. at Princeton, Rhee returned to Korea intending to become a missionary. He worked at the YMCA in Seoul and lectured widely in support of missionary and educational activities. Rhee's growing prominence brought him to the attention of increasingly suspicious Japanese authorities. During 1911 - 12, Japanese authorities arrested over one hundred Christian leaders on suspicion of plotting to assassinate Japanese officials. In 1912, 105 of these leaders were sentenced to hard labor in what became known as the "Korean Conspiracy Case" (105인 사건). Rhee was not among those arrested, possibly because of the intercession of his influential foreign friends who recommended that he leave Korea for the United States. Rhee's friends worked with Methodist Church leaders to have him invited to the Methodist Quadrennial Conference in Minneapolis, Minnesota. Rhee would not return to Korea until 1945.

## CHAPTER 1

Journal, 1912

(From the beginning of the journey March 26th to the end of it, I was elected by the Methodist Church to be a Lay Delegate to the Methodist Quadrennial conference.)

## March 26

Leaving Seoul for Tokyo at 9:35 a.m. by Fusan train on the way to the United States. The Korean Young Men's Christian Association in Tokyo invited me to attend the students' conference from March 31st to April 5th. From Tokyo I will start for America on the 6th of April to attend the General Conference of the M.E. Church in Minneapolis.

Seoul train reached Fusan at 7 p.m. and we got on the Megoka Maru at 8 o'clock.

Shimonoseki—arrived at 8 a.m. 27th of March. Leaving Shimonoseki at 9:30 a.m. Landed much wet in a small boat packed up with passengers of all classes in driving rain with a fearful wind.

## March 28

Arrived at Kyoto at 12:30 a.m. Met at the station by two Japanese Y.M.C.A. men, one of whom being the Secretary. Mr. G.L. Phelps of New York International Committee sent greetings to me. The Korean young student and his family all going to Tokyo came with me to the hotel which had been engaged for me by the Japanese Association.

The whole day of the 28th was pleasantly spent in sight seeing and entertainments given by pastors and Y.M.C.A. men of Kyoto. At 8:20 p.m. I left Kyoto for Tokyo.

## March 29

Arrived at Tokyo Shimbashi station at 9 a.m. Met by 23 Korean students at the station. Stayed overnight at 〈芳館〉 Japanese hotel. Over a hundred students had gone out to meet me the night before but were disappointed. When we arrived at Tokyo it rained a little. The hotel is near the Korean Y.M.C.A. A welcome meeting was given at the Association building by the Association at which about 67 students were present. Baik Nam Hoon 〈백남훈〉 presided and 〈조용은〉<sup>56)</sup> made the welcome address which was responded by Messrs. Gillet, Cram, and myself.

## March 30

We came to Kamakura 〈검창(鎌倉)〉 about 60 miles from Tokyo. 30 men hired a separate car. The Conference was formally opened on the 30th at 7 p.m. with an address by Dr. S.R., the president of the Conference.

April 5th at 9:30 p.m. the Conference was closed and at 8 a.m. April 6 thirty men left Kamakura for Tokyo. We were met at the Shimbashi station by the delegates of 〈친목회〉<sup>57)</sup> in Tokyo. They led us to the hotel where a banquet was prepared by 〈친목회원 중〉<sup>58)</sup>, 24 in number. We all sat in front of the hotel in the rain to take picture together. At the banquet addresses were made expressing the value of friendship. Before the close of the banquet I had to go to the funeral of Bishop Honda<sup>59)</sup> at the Aoyama Kaguin or 〈청산학원〉<sup>60)</sup> at 2 p.m. From the funeral we came back to Mr. Choi's 〈최상호〉<sup>61)</sup> for supper. Then we came to the Y.M.C.A. at Tokyo. 218 Korean students gathered for a special meeting at 7 p.m.

56) Jo Yong-eun (later Jo So-ang, Cho So-ang, Tjosowang, 1887 – 1958) would become the minister of foreign affairs for the Korean Provisional Government (KPG) in the 1940s. In 1950, he was elected to the National Assembly of the ROK.

57) Chinmok-hoe, which means "friendship society".

58) Members of the "friendship society".

59) Honda Yoichi (d. 1912), a Japanese Christian leader, was the first bishop of the autonomous Japanese Methodist Church, the first president of the Japanese Federation of Christian Churches, and vice-chairman of the World Student Christian Federation.

60) A Methodist missionary school in Tokyo.

61) Choe Sang-ho.

Messrs. Cram and Gillet made a short address each. I made an address on "The Expectations from Korean Students." Yen 1,362.50 was raised at once for the building fund of Y.M.C.A.

It was announced at the meeting that the International Committee gave 20,000.00 Yen, other funds on hand was 1,056.00 Yen. Sale of the house 370.00 Yen; sale of 50 subo 355.00. Total 24,976.00 Yen ready. Land will cost 15,450.00 Yen. Registration fee, 1.00 Yen. Building will cost 19,000.00 Yen. Total 34,450.00 on hand. Yen 10,474.00 is wanted now.

The number of students that contributed toward the sum of 1,362.50 was 167 boys. It means about Yen 8.50 each by average. On the 9th, one man came 〈박태규〉<sup>62)</sup> to the Association and pledged Yen 60.00 for the building fund. One Mr. Chung offered 5.00 Yen and another 2.50 Yen.

Sunday we completed the organization of the Students Gospel Band—〈복음회〉—the chairman 〈노정일〉<sup>63)</sup>. Two students, including 〈정세윤〉<sup>64)</sup> former president of 〈친목회〉<sup>65)</sup>, volunteered to join the Band.

April 10th, at 8:40 a.m. we left Tokyo by rail and got on the ship, Tamba Maru 〈단과환〉 in the harbor of Yokohama at 11 a.m. The number of my berth is 10 on the upper deck of the 1st class passage.

At 2 p.m. we left the harbor of Yokohama. 〈김정식(金貞植), 최상호(崔相浩), 민충식(閔忠植)〉<sup>66)</sup> were aboard to see me off.

62) Park Tae-gyu.

63) No Jeong-il.

64) Jeong Se-yun.

65) Friendship society.

66) Kim Jeong-sik, Choe Sang-ho, and Min Chung-sik. Kim (1862 – 1937) converted to Christianity under Rhee's influence during their imprisonment. Min (1890 – 1978) was a future member of the KPG in Shanghai.

### Sunday April 7, 1912

Tokyo, Japan

Korean students who were baptized by Rev. Cram at the Y.M.C.A. building are:  
 (names are in that other list.)<sup>67)</sup>

The Students' Gospel Band organized in Kamakura, Japan April 5th, 1912.

The Charter members are 26 in number. (See the list.)<sup>68)</sup>

### April 17

Wednesday. We crossed "the Line" and therefore we had another Wednesday.

Three days we had a heavy storm, but I enjoyed all the voyage along. Including two Wednesdays, we traveled 15 days without seeing anything but water until the 24th, morning, when we saw the Kamakura or (겸창) which was going back to Japan. Then by wireless, we heard of the accident of the S.S. Titanic on the White Star line, which came into collision with iceberg on the Atlantic on April 14 en route to Montreal. Passengers (2,400) on board were all drowned except 800 that were rescued by a steamer which happened to pass by.

We saw land, a part of Vancouver at 11 p.m. We anchored at the harbor of Victoria at 6 a.m.

### April 25

Quarantine officers came aboard to examine the passengers. At 9:30 we landed at Victoria for about 3 or 4 hours. Bishop Harris<sup>69)</sup> and I walked through the city, wrote letters, and took lunch at the Empress Hotel.

67) Not extant.

68) Not extant.

69) Merriman Colbert Harris (1846–1921), a long-serving missionary to Japan. In 1904, Harris was ordained as a missionary bishop to Korea and Japan by the Methodist Episcopal Church. He was influential in helping Rhee leave Korea in 1912 (see note for 12 December 1910) even though they held opposing views on Japan's colonization of Korea.

We reached Port Townsend at 7 p.m. since leaving Victoria at 5 p.m. The steamer whistled for quarantine doctor but no response so we anchored for the night.

### April 26

At 6 a.m. we were through with quarantine examination and started at 6:30 a.m. for Seattle. The examination took a long time and I had to wait at the place for about 30 minutes.

At 10 a.m. we landed in Seattle. We engaged rooms at the Y.M.C.A. building and found Mr. E.F. Hall rooming there. He was to speak to a women's Foreign Missionary meeting and I was invited to take lunch at the First Presbyterian Church. About 200 ladies were at the luncheon after which I was introduced to make an address.

When the service was over we went over to attend the laying of the corner stone of a Japanese church.

At the wharf I was met by Mr. (이호우(李昊宇))<sup>70)</sup> and we had lunch with him and Mrs. Bak. Mr. Yi lives at 665 King St. Seattle, Washington.

At 3:30 p.m. Dr. Leonard, the Pastor of First M.E. Church, took us out in an automobile through the University ground, and woods, and along the Lakes, Washington and Union. We did not leave Saturday night as Dr. Leonard urged us both to stay until Sunday for the morning service.

### April 27

Sunday at 9:30 I spoke at the Sunday school; about one thousand people. There Bishop and I made two addresses at the classes including a Japanese class in the church. At 11 a.m. two of us took charge of the morning service; about 1,500 people in the church. After the service we had dinner at Dr. Leonard's.

At 7 p.m. we started for Minneapolis by the Northern Pacific R.R.

70) Lee Ho-u.

## May 1

7:30 a.m. we arrived at Minneapolis. Harvard chambers were reserved for us, Dr. Noble<sup>71</sup>) and myself. At 10 a.m. the Conference opened. The Methodist General Conference continued till the 29th of May.

## May 11

Saturday I went to Winona, Minnesota, a beautiful town on the bank of the Mississippi, about 115 miles from Minneapolis, with Bishop Harris to take charge of the Sunday services at the First Methodist Church. I spoke on the 12th in the morning service, Sunday school, and evening service with Bishop Harris and at the Epworth League. On the 13th, Monday, we returned to Minneapolis.

## May 25

I was invited to preach at two churches about 3 miles apart in a small place called Dundas, Minnesota, near Northfield for the young English clergyman, G.W. Roberts on Sunday 26th. Returned to Minneapolis Sunday evening to preach at a mission known as Children's Gospel Mission.

## May 29

The General Conference closed. I left Minneapolis for Chicago by the Northwestern R.R. with Bishop Harris. Left the station at 7:55 p.m.

Miss Andrews, the daughter of Mr. A.C. Andrews of 245 Clifton Ave. Minneapolis, played tennis and gave auto rides.

71) William Arthur Noble (1866–1945) was a Methodist missionary and Rhee's former teacher at Paichai School. Although Noble was criticized for pro-Japanese sympathies, Rhee claimed that he had worked behind the scenes to prevent Korean Methodist churches from being annexed by the Japanese Methodist Church. An autonomous Korean Methodist Church was established in 1930; the institution was gradually brought under the control of Japanese officials in the 1940s.

## May 30

Arrived at Chicago at 9 a.m. Met by Mrs. L.G. Starks<sup>72</sup>) at the Northwestern station. The first night was spent in S. Chicago and the other three nights in Chicago until June 3rd. Monday, when I left Chicago for Philadelphia by Penn. R.R. at 3:15 p.m.

## June 4

Tuesday at 5:49 p.m. I arrived at Philadelphia and roomed at the Y.M.C.A. at 15th and Arch Streets.

## June 5.

A meeting at the Lighthouse. Miss Jessie Wilson<sup>73</sup>).

## June 8

Saturday at 10 a.m. I left Philadelphia and arrived at Pocomoke City, Md. Mr. W.J. McCullough met me at the station. Sunday morning I spoke at the Presbyterian Church and then rested until the 17th, Monday, when I left Philadelphia at 1:40 p.m.

## June 17

Monday at 8:10 p.m. I came to Princeton and slept in the Guest Room in Alexander Hall. The next morning I got settled in Room A of the same hall.

72) Lizzie G. Starks served as a missionary for the Woman's Home Missionary Society of the Methodist Episcopal Church and later worked at the Korean Christian Institute in Honolulu, which was founded by Rhee. According to Rhee's unpublished and incomplete autobiography, Rhee met Starks in Ocean Grove, New Jersey, in 1905 when he was looking for a place to spend the summer. Starks and Rhee remained in contact, and letters from 1908 reveal that Starks was supporting Rhee financially while he was a student in the U.S. See Lew, Rhee Correspondence in English, 2:20, 31, 34, 40–41.

73) Jessie Wilson Sayre (1887–1933) was the second daughter of Woodrow Wilson. Presumably she met Rhee when he was a student at Princeton and her father was the president of the university. In Rhee's unpublished autobiography, Rhee explained that he had become "intimate" friends with Woodrow Wilson and that the ladies of the Wilson house were particularly interested in mission work. According to Rhee, "One of the president's daughters at one time thought seriously of going to Korea to take up Y.W.C.A. work." This was probably Jessie Wilson, who eventually served on the national board of the YWCA. See Rhee, "The 1919 Movement", n.d., SRI, Seoul.

## June 19

50 copies of the Doctor's thesis, "Neutrality as Influenced by the U.S."<sup>74)</sup> were received from Dean West<sup>75)</sup> who managed to print it at the expense of the University. At 4:50 p.m. I left Princeton for Sea Girt, due there at 6:44 p.m. Return trip fare \$1.80.

## June 19

Meeting at the Governor's cottage in Sea Girt, N.J. (Woodrow Wilson<sup>76)</sup> was Governor at that time.)

## June 20

Thursday. Another meeting with Miss Wilson.<sup>77)</sup>

## June 21

At 7:44 a.m. I left Sea Girt for Princeton and reached the latter place at 8:45 a.m.  
At 11:11 a.m. I left Princeton for New York on my way to Northfield.  
At 1 p.m. I arrived at New York. The night was spent at Y.M.C.A. 23rd St., New York.

## June 22

Saturday. Leaving N.Y. for Northfield from Grand Central Depot at 9:15 a.m.  
At 2 p.m. I reached Northfield and roomed at Gould Hall 221.

74) Rhee's doctoral dissertation.

75) Andrew F. West (1853–1943), dean of Princeton's Graduate School. Letters from West in Rhee's student file indicated that he took a personal interest in Rhee and did what he could to support Rhee during his time at Princeton.

76) Wilson (1856–1924), an educator and politician, was the president of Princeton, 1902–10, governor of New Jersey, 1911–13, and president of the United States, 1913–21. Wilson's rhetoric of self-determination for subject peoples and Rhee's personal connection with him caused many Koreans to hope Wilson would raise the issue of Korean independence at the Paris Peace Conference (1919). Rhee tried repeatedly to contact Wilson in 1919, but was unsuccessful. See the entries for 1–5 March 1919.

77) Probably Jessie Wilson Sayre.

## June 29

At 1:35 p.m. left Northfield and arrived at Springfield, Mass. at 3 p.m. Visited Mr. Cho (Nam Bok) at the Y.M.C.A. training school. I left for Worcester at 5:55 p.m.

## June 30

7 a.m. arrived at N.Y. at 3 p.m. Left N.Y. for Asbury Park. At 5 p.m. arrived at Asbury Park. It was Sunday. A visit was made at Sea Girt that evening with the Wilson family.

## July 1

Monday. At 1:39 p.m. I left Asbury Park and reached Princeton Junction at 2:30. Having no train connection until 4:14 p.m. I walked along the R.R. track to Princeton Seminary.

## July 6

Saturday. At 9:33 a.m. I left Princeton and arrived at Belmar, N.J. at 11:30 a.m.  
At the Woodbine Cottage 3rd. Ave. and B. St. I stopped. Another visit at Sea Girt with Miss Wilson<sup>78)</sup>.

## July 16

Monday, 8:50 a.m. I left Belmar for Princeton.

## July 20

Saturday I left Princeton for Philadelphia to see Kim Chang ho<sup>79)</sup> on Sunday and reached Broad St. station at 5 p.m.

78) Probably Jessie Wilson Sayre.

79) Kim (김장호, b. 1876), a former soldier in the Korean imperial army, immigrated to the United States in 1904. He worked closely with Park Yong-man to offer military training to Koreans in the U.S. and, later, in Manchuria.

## July 22

Monday at 3:30 p.m. leaving for Bridgeton, N.J. but spent the night at Camden Y.M.C.A.

## July 23

Tuesday at 8:30 a.m. Left Camden for Bridgeton. At 9:15 a.m. I arrived at Bridgeton. Mrs. Bowen met me at the station.

## July 25

At 3 p.m. I left Bridgeton and returned to Princeton at 7:20 p.m.

## July 27

Saturday 3 p.m. I left Princeton for Stockton, N.J. at which place I landed at 5:20 p.m. Preached Sunday at the Presbyterian Church for Mr. Wm. H. Woolverton and spent Sunday with his family.

## July 29

Monday, I returned to Princeton in the morning and left for New York at 3:37 p.m., stopping at Newark to see Mr. Pamly.

## July 30

Tuesday at 9:30 a.m. I left Newark and came to New York City where I took the boat "Morse" at Desbrosses St. station for Silver Bay, invited by Sherwood Eddy<sup>80</sup> to spend a week with him and his family on Lake George.

<sup>80</sup>) Eddy (1871–1963), an American missionary who became an international evangelist and leader of the YMCA. Rhee's prison conversion story would be featured in Eddy's *A New Era in Asia* (1913).

## July 31

Thursday at 4 p.m. we arrived at Silver Bay and was stationed at Walnut 2.

## August 2

Saturday evening after supper we went to Glen Iroquois Camp<sup>81</sup>) to stay with Mr. Eddy to speak at the Camp Auditorium Sunday morning to 150 young people. Mr. Tibbit, the leader. Monday morning I came back to Silver Bay.

## August 8

Thursday at 2 p.m. I left Silver Bay for Hastings, Nebr. but when I came to Lake George at 4:30 p.m. the money had not come so I stopped overnight in Silver Bay at the Presbyterian Minister's house; Wilcox is the name.

## August 11

Sunday morning Mr. Wilcox and I rode on a cab over 10 miles to preach to a country church and there to another place to teach and speak to a Sunday School and there to take dinner. We drove 20 miles both ways.

## August 12

Monday at 2:40 p.m. I left Lake George for Hastings, Nebr. via Albany, Buffalo, Chicago & Lincoln.

## August 13

Tuesday, at 12:50 p.m. arrived at Chicago and left for Hastings, Nebr. at 5 p.m.

<sup>81</sup>) Rhee is likely referring to Camp Iroquois at Glen Eyrie, a summer camp for boys founded by YMCA secretary George F. Tibbits. The camp was located on Lake George in Upstate New York.

## August 14

Wednesday at 9:30 a.m. arrived at Hastings Y.M. Park and another boy came to the train to meet me about 40 miles from Hastings. At the station, 34 boys in military uniform and with guns saluted me.<sup>82)</sup>

## August 17

Saturday afternoon we went to Doniphan, Nebraska, about 14 miles from Hastings, to preach in a small church Sunday morning for Mr. Kilburn, an English Pastor. Sunday afternoon we returned to Hastings College w[h]ere we held a service with Korean boys.

## August 19

Monday at 12:20 p.m. I left Hastings for Omaha on my way back to Silver Bay. Reached Hastings at 6:15 p.m.

## August 20

Tuesday at 7:15 left Omaha for Chicago and arrived in Chicago at 9:10 p.m. The night was spent in S. Chicago.

## August 21

Wednesday 5:30 p.m. I left Chicago for Silver Bay by the Express train of Lake Shore line.

Arrived in Albany at 1:50 p.m. Left Albany at 4:15 p.m. and arrived at Lake George at 6:40 p.m. That night I slept at Mr. Wilcox's.

82) Park Yong-man (1881-1928) founded the Korean Youth Military Academy in Hastings, Nebraska, in 1910. Hastings College and several local churches supported the school as a missionary endeavor. The school operated until 1916. Park would later establish a military training center in Hawaii. He and Rhee disagreed whether the priority of the Korean independence movement should be education or military training. Park was elected as foreign minister of the KPG in 1919 but only briefly served. He was assassinated in Beijing by a Korean communist.

## August 22

Thursday left Lake George at 9:50 a.m. and came to Silver Bay at 12:10 p.m.

## August 28

Wednesday, at 8:30 a.m. I left Silver Bay with Frank Brockman and others and arrived in N.Y. City at 5:50 p.m. rooming at 23 St. Y.M.C.A.

## August 29

Thursday at 3 p.m. I left N.Y. and came to Camden, N.J. at 5 p.m., rooming in the Y.M.C.A. building.

## September 5

Thursday at 3 p.m. I left for Pocomoke City [Maryland] from Camden, N.J. At 8:30 p.m. I reached Pocomoke City.

## September 7

At 6:35 a.m. left Pocomoke and reached Camden at 1 a.m. [p.m.]

At 8 p.m. I left Philadelphia and reached Lancaster, Pa. at 10:10 p.m. Stopping at Mrs. Appenzeller's<sup>83)</sup> over Sunday I preached morning and evening and talked to the Sunday School of the First M.E. Church. As a result Mr. Baroden, the pastor reported in the evening that \$200.00 were pledged for Appenzeller Memorial Church.

## September 9

Monday at 10 a.m. I left Lancaster and reached Philadelphia at 12 o'clock and later to Camden.

83) Ella Appenzeller (1854-1915) was the wife of Henry Gerhard Appenzeller (1858-1902). The Appenzellers were among the first Protestant missionaries in Korea. They founded Paichai School where Rhee began his Western education.

## September 16

Monday at 10:12 left for Atlantic City to attend the Y.M.C.A. Conference 16-18 of September.

## September 18

Wednesday at 5 p.m. I left Atlantic City and arrived in Camden at 6:25 p.m.

## October 14

At 12 p.m. I left Philadelphia by Reading R.R. for N.Y. and arrived at N.Y. at 2 p.m.

## October 15

At 7:50 p.m. I left N.Y. and reached Camden at 11 p.m.

## October 21

Monday 9 p.m. on the receipt of a telegram from A.W. Noble I left Camden for Binghamton, N.Y. via N.Y. City.

## October 22

Tuesday at 8 a.m. arrived at Binghamton.

## October 23

Wednesday 10:50 a.m. left Binghamton for N.Y. Arrived in N.Y. at 4:30 p.m. and left for Philadelphia at 9 p.m. due to the Broad St. station, Philadelphia at 11:05 p.m.

## November 4

Monday at 9:30 I left Camden “for good” and at 10:30 left Philadelphia for Washington, D.C. Stopping over-night at Baltimore on the way. Spent the night at Baltimore—visiting

“the world in Baltimore.” a great missionary pageant.<sup>84)</sup>

## November 5

Tuesday I arrived at Washington at 11:30 a.m.

## November 8

Friday at 10 a.m. I left Washington for Baltimore and reached the latter place at 11:54 a.m.

## November 17

Sunday at 3:35 p.m. I left Washington for Baltimore by electric car and arrived in Baltimore at 5 p.m.

## November 18

Monday at 3:00 p.m. I left Baltimore for Washington. Sunday evening I spoke at the Park Avenue M.E. Church. Mr. Parrish the pastor, entertaining over-night.

## November 30

Saturday 1 p.m. left Washington for Philadelphia to meet Mr. E.F. Reimer<sup>85)</sup> at 5 p.m. who would take me to his church in Marietta, Pa. for Sunday service. At 8 p.m. reached Marietta. Sunday morning and evening I preached at the Presbyterian Church. About 300 people in the morning audience and about 350 in the evening.

84) Missionary “pageants”, such as “The World in Baltimore”, were a mixture of theatrical productions and exhibitions that sought to interest American audiences in foreign missions. The pageants showcased the customs and cultures of non-Christian peoples around the world. These elaborate events drew thousands of visitors a day.

85) Edward Franklin Reimer, a Presbyterian minister, was a friend of Rhee from his days at Princeton. Reimer was a speaker at the First Korean Congress held in April 1919 and later gave lectures about Korea on the Chautauqua lecture circuit. See “Philadelphia Conference 1919 Addresses and Resolutions”, in the “First Korean Congress in Philadelphia Conference (1919)” folder at the Syngman Rhee Institute (SRI), Seoul. See also Philip Jaisohn to Rhee, 27 December 1919, in Lew, Rhee Correspondence in English, 2:313.

## December 2

Monday at 10:20 a.m. I left Marietta with Mr. Reimer who came as far as Harrisburg. At 4:40 p.m. I returned to Washington.

## December 17

Tuesday at 12:30 p.m. leaving Washington for Pocomoke City at which place I am due at 8:17 p.m. I returned to Washington on Dec. 21. At 3 p.m. I left Washington for Foreign Mission Seminary, Takoma Park, Maryland.

Christmas and New Year's Day I spent in the Seminary.

## CHAPTER 1

1913

## January 6

Monday at 12 o'clock I left the Foreign Mission Seminary for Washington. Spent the evening with the Kennyes and slept at Mr. Chung <정기환(鄭基煥)><sup>86)</sup>.

## January 7

Tuesday at 8 a.m. I left Washington, D.C. for Philadelphia to meet Dr. Jaisohn. At 12 o'clock I reached Philadelphia to meet Dr. Jaisohn. At 5:03 p.m. I left Philadelphia and reached Princeton at 6:04 p.m.

## January 10

Friday at 1:12 p.m. I left Princeton for Philadelphia and Chicago. Reached Philadelphia at 2:30 p.m. and left Philadelphia at 4:31 p.m. for Chicago.

## January 11

Saturday at 9 a.m. I stopped off at Columbus, Ohio to see three Kims and found Ahn Chung soo. At 9:45 p.m. (Central time) I left Columbus for Chicago.

## January 12

Sunday at 7:30 a.m. I arrived at Chicago and came directly to South Chicago to Mrs. Starks'.

---

86) Jeong Gi-hwan.

## January 15

Wednesday at 11 p.m. I left Chicago for Los Angeles <박처후(朴處厚), 김승제(金承濟)><sup>87)</sup> were with me at the station.

## January 20

Monday at 8 a.m. I arrived at Los Angeles was met by Min<sup>88)</sup> and four other Koreans.

## January 21

Tuesday at 5 p.m. leaving Los Angeles for San Francisco.

## January 22

Wednesday at 9:15 a.m. I arrived at San Francisco.

## January 24

Friday I went to San Anselmo Seminary and returned to Frisco on the 27th. Dr. Langdon is the President of the Seminary. Mr. <이광윤(李光潤)><sup>89)</sup> of <평양><sup>90)</sup> was the student at the Seminary.

## January 28

Tuesday at 2 p.m. I left San Francisco for Honolulu in the Sierra, in which the stateroom is 79.

87) Park Cheo-hu and Kim Seung-jae. Park (b. 1883) served as a teacher and principal of the Korean Youth Military Academy in Hastings, Nebraska. Kim was a member of the New York Korean Mutual Aid Society (뉴욕한인공제회).

88) Min Chan-ho (1878-1945), a Paichai School alumnus and a Methodist minister, was studying at the University of Southern California. He would serve as a teacher and then principal at Rhee's Korean Christian Institute in Hawaii after 1919. In 1921, Min became a founding member of the Dongji-hoe (동지회, Comrade Society), an organization formed by Rhee's most-ardent supporters.

89) Lee Gwang-yun.

90) Pyongyang.

## February 3

Monday at 8 a.m. we landed in Honolulu and was met by a large number of Koreans at the wharf.

A telegram from home, Seoul, announcing the passing away of my father was received.

## May 14

At 10 a.m. we left Honolulu (Mr. S.H. Park<sup>91)</sup> and myself) for Mahukona, Hawaii by the steamship Mauna Kea.

## June 12

Thursday at 5 a.m. I returned to Honolulu having visited Hawaii and Maui.

June 26<sup>92)</sup>

Wednesday I left Honolulu for Lihue, Kauai, for an itinerating tour.<sup>93)</sup> Mr. Ahn Heng-keng<sup>94)</sup> accompanied me.

## July 9

Wednesday at 6 a.m. I returned to Honolulu from Lihue by the S.S. G.W. Hall.

91) Park Sang-ha (박상하), an officer in the Hawaiian branch of the Korean National Association (KNA). The KNA was formed in 1910 to unify Korean nationalist societies in North America and Hawaii, but rivalries between the KNA's many branches and other organizations (e.g., Dongji-hoe) hampered unity. Rhee visited the islands of Hawaii and Maui with Park from 14 May to 12 June, investigating the condition of Korean immigrants.

92) June 26 was a Thursday.

93) Rhee was investigating the condition of Korean immigrants between 26 June and 29 July.

94) Ahn (안현경, 1881-1957) would serve as president of the Hawaiian branch of the KNA, 1917-18. He was a founding member of the Dongji-hoe.

July 29

Wednesday at 6 p.m. I left Kahului by S.S. Claudine with six children<sup>95)</sup> for Honolulu due next morning at 5:30.

---

95) Rhee was likely transporting these children to Honolulu to receive an education in the Korean Compound School, a boarding school of the Methodist Episcopal Church for Korean immigrants. In August 1913, Rhee would be named principal of the school, which he renamed the Korean Central School. Rhee resigned in June 1915 and founded his own school, which in 1918 would become known as the Korean Christian Institute.

## CHAPTER 1

1914

April 29

Leaving Honolulu at 10 a.m. on Steamship Mauna Kea for Hawaii.

May 15

Leaving Hilo at 10 a.m. by S.S. Mauna Kea and reached Honolulu at 6:30 a.m. May 16.

July 15

Leaving Honolulu at 10 a.m. by S.S. Mauna Kea for Lahaina, Maui.

**CHAPTER 1**

1915

February 3

I left Honolulu for Lahaina, Maui, and arrived on the same day at 3:30 p.m. Mrs. Starks<sup>96)</sup> and myself stopped at the Pioneer Hotel.

February 10

At 5 p.m. Mrs. Starks and myself left Kahului on the Claudine and returned to Honolulu at 5 a.m. Feb. 11.

March 6

Saturday at 3 p.m. Mrs. Starks and I left Honolulu on a trip to Hawaii on the S.S. Mauna Kea.

March 7

Sunday at 7:30 a.m. we landed at Hilo and stopped at Mrs. Waits.  
Monday at 12:30 p.m. we left on auto for Kilauea and returned to Hilo at 9:15 p.m. The volcano is raging with red hot lava like a lake of fire.

March 19

Friday at 4 p.m. we left Kohala for Honolulu. Mrs. Starks was also coming.

---

96) By this time Lizzie Starks had joined Rhee in Hawaii to serve as a teacher in the Korean Central School.

March 20

Saturday we landed at Honolulu at 7 a.m.

March 26

Friday. Mrs. Starks and I left Honolulu at 3 p.m. and landed at Nawiliwili near Lihue.

April 4<sup>97)</sup>

We landed at 3:30 a.m. A number of girls and our friends met us at the wharf in Honolulu.

April 31<sup>98)</sup>

Saturday at 5 p.m. we left Nawiliwili with two little girls for Honolulu.

August 28

At 3 p.m. I left Honolulu for Hilo and landed in Hilo at 6:30 Sunday a.m. the 29th of August.

September 17

At 3:30 p.m. we left Hamakua on Friday with several children and arrived at Honolulu at 6:30 a.m. 18th of Sept.

September 25

Saturday. I took the Kinau at 10 p.m. with the delegation to the Civic Convention at Lihue, Kauai and landed in Lihue at 7 a.m. Sept. 26 Sunday.

---

97) The entries for 4 April and 31 April were transposed in the typescript.

98) The correct date is likely 1 May 1915.

October 5

Tuesday at 5 p.m. I left Lihue and landed in Honolulu at 4 a.m. Wednesday the 6th.

December 8

Tuesday at 10 a.m. I left Honolulu for Lahaina, Maui.

December 22

Wednesday at 10:20 a.m. I left Hana for Honolulu.

December 23

At 2:30 a.m. I arrived at Honolulu.

## CHAPTER 1

1916

April 16

Saturday April 15 Mrs. L.G. Starks and Miss Miriam Dickinson<sup>99)</sup> and myself left Honolulu for Kona, Hawaii on S.S. Kilauea.

April 28

Friday, Mrs. Starks, Miss Dickinson and myself left Mahukona, Hawaii on the steamship, Mauna Kea at 4 p.m. and reached Honolulu at 7 a.m. Saturday, April 29.

August 25

Friday left Honolulu for Kauai and returned on Sept. 3, Sunday.

November 22

Wednesday at 10 a.m. I left Honolulu for Hilo on the Mauna Kea.

December 8

Friday at 4 p.m. I left Mahukona, Kohala, Hawaii, for Honolulu.

December 9

Saturday at 7 a.m. I landed in Honolulu with three little girls. Mr. H.K. Ahn and several others met us at the wharf.

<sup>99)</sup> A volunteer at the Korean Christian Institute from Pocomoke, Maryland.

## CHAPTER 1

1917

June 16

Saturday at 3 p.m. I with Dr. Rey <이희경><sup>100)</sup> and Mr. Kim Sung Ki<sup>101)</sup> and several girls left Honolulu for Lahaina, Maui.

June 18

Monday at 12 p.m. we left Lahaina and reached Honolulu Tuesday at 7:30 a.m.

October 31

Wednesday I left Honolulu for Kohala, Hawaii by S.S. Kilauea at 10 a.m.

November 9

Friday at 10 a.m. we left Hilo for Honolulu on Kilauea,

100) Rey (1890–1941), an American-trained medical doctor who would hold multiple offices in the KPG.

101) Kim (d. 1933) was the vice-president of the Hawaiian branch of the KNA, a journalist for the Korean Pacific Magazine, and an officer in the Dongji-hoe.

## CHAPTER 1

1918

July 17

Wednesday at 10 a.m. leaving Honolulu for Kohala, Hawaii on the S.S. Mauna Kea. Kim Young Woo<sup>102)</sup> and Kim In Kiu came to the pier to see me off.

July 28

Friday I left Hilo at 10 a.m. to reach Honolulu at 6 p.m.

August 21

Wednesday at 10 a.m. Miss Tracy, Miss Mabel Hartson<sup>103)</sup> and I left Honolulu on the Mauna Kea and landed in Lahaina, Maui, at 4:30 p.m.

August 26

Monday at 12 p.m. Miss Tracy, Miss Hartson and I left Lahaina, Maui and returned to Honolulu at 8 a.m. Aug. 27. This was the trip to Haleakala Mountain.

November 4

Monday I left Honolulu for Kauai at 5 p.m. on S.S. Kinau and landed at Nawiliwili at 2 a.m. Tuesday, the 5th, Mr. Lee Chong Kwan and Kim Chung Hyun met me and drove me to Koloa.

102) Kim was a teacher at the Korean Central School and secretary of the Hawaiian branch of the KNA.

103) Hartson was a teacher at the Korean Christian Institute.

November 16

Saturday at 5 p.m. I left Lihue, Kauai for Honolulu bringing Lee Yobak, student for the School. Lee Chong Kwan,<sup>104</sup> Ahn See Hup<sup>105</sup> and Kim Chung Hyun came to the wharf on the latter's car.

1919 ~  
~ 1932

104) Lee (이종관, d. 1959) was president of the Hawaiian branch of the KNA, 1919–20, and a member of the Dongji-hoe.

105) Ahn (안시흠, Henry Ahn), a Methodist minister and member of the Dongji-hoe.

## CHAPTER 2

1919

January 6

I left Honolulu at 6 p.m. on the steamship Enterprise. H.K. Ahn, Young W. Kim, Sur Ki Moon and Ada Young came to see me off at pier 19. There are only 16 passengers aboard.

January 6<sup>106)</sup>

The (S.S.) Enterprise left Honolulu at 4 p.m. I went to bed at 9 p.m.

January 7

Tuesday. 2nd day out. I got up at 7 a.m. and went to bed again. Stayed in bed all day and all night until next morning. Ate only an apple.

January 8

3rd day out. I got up at 7 a.m. Went to bed at 10:30 p.m. but could not sleep until long after midnight.

January 9

4th day out. Thursday—Got up at 7:10 a.m. A beautiful weather. I went to bed at 10:30 p.m. Ship rolled all night.

106) The typescript contains two entries for 6 January. Both entries have been reproduced here.

January 10

5th day. Got up at 7:30 a.m. Went to bed at 10 p.m. The boat rocked all night and a man fell from his berth.

January 11

6th day. Got up at 7:25 a.m. Sick in bed since after lunch.

January 12

7th day. Had breakfast in my room. Wrote letters and stayed in bed part of the day. Sent a wireless to Changho Ahn<sup>107)</sup>.

January 13

8th day. Got up at 7:30 a.m. Preliminary Peace Conference at Paris favored a United China. I wrote nearly all day.

January 14

9th day. Got up at 7:30 a.m. morning news wireless. First Peace Conference decided that Japan will not represent China and then we tried to decide the number of delegates.<sup>108)</sup>

107) Ahn Chang-ho (안창호, 1878–1938), a Korean independence activist, founded several Korean political associations in California and Korea before assuming leadership of the KNA in 1915. Ahn was chosen as KPG secretary of labor in 1919. His reputation as a leader was rivaled only by Rhee's and the relationship between the two was characterized by periods of cooperation and competition. On the nature of their rivalry, see Young-ick Lew, *The Making of the First Korean President: Syngman Rhee's Quest for Independence, 1875–1948* (Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 2013), 141–43.

108) The KNA decided to send Rhee and Henry Chung (see note for Chung on 1 February 1919) to the Paris Peace Conference as its delegates. Koreans living in China also sent Kim Kyu-sik (see note for Kim on 28 October 1920), who unlike Rhee and Chung succeeded in getting to Paris. Kim successfully communicated with the American delegation, and even earned the sympathy of some of its members, but the issue of Korea was never raised at the conference. For details of Kim's actions at the conference, see Erez Manela, *The Wilsonian Moment: Self-Determination and the International Origins of Anticolonial Nationalism* (New York: Oxford University Press, 2007), 207.

## January 15

10th day. Got off in San Francisco at 9:30 a.m. David Lee<sup>109)</sup> and Bak Yil Kiu came out to meet me at Pier 32.

Keystone Hotel. Visited San Anselmo. Met Miss Blair.

January 15<sup>110)</sup>

Wednesday, reached San Francisco at 10:30 a.m. Met by David Lee<sup>111)</sup> and Bak Yil Kiu. We stopped at the Keystone Hotel.

## January 16

Visited Berkeley. George Whang and Pil Chi Sung going together. Met Prof. Ed. Elliott, my former professor in International law at Princeton.

## January 17

Friday. Did shopping with <백일규><sup>112)</sup> and Pil <필지성><sup>113)</sup>.

## January 18

Left San Francisco with George Whang and Pil at 8:30 a.m. and reached Dinuba at 7:30 p.m. Stayed overnight at <이순기><sup>114)</sup> house.

January 18<sup>115)</sup>

I left San Francisco with Pil Chi Sung and George Whang and came to Dinuba at 7:20

109) Lee was part of the KNA's leadership in California.

110) The typescript contains two entries for 15 January. Both entries have been reproduced here.

111) Lee (이대위, 1878-1928) was a leader of the KNA in California and served as a member of the Korean Commission in Washington, D.C., 1919.

112) Baek Il-gyu.

113) Pil Ji-seong.

114) Lee Sun-gi, see below.

115) The typescript contains two entries for 18 January. Both entries have been reproduced here.

p.m. <이범녕><sup>116)</sup> and <이순기><sup>114)</sup> came to meet us. We spent the night at <이순기>'s<sup>114)</sup> house. <김승현><sup>117)</sup> came to see me at night.

## January 19

Left Dinuba at 8:20 a.m. with Pil and George for Frisco. Reached Los Angeles at 7:20 p.m. Clark Hotel.

January 19<sup>118)</sup>

Pil Chi Sung and I left Dinuba at 8:20 a.m. and George Whang went back to San Francisco. Park Kio Sang's wife and many others came to see me off.

We reached Los Angeles at 7:20 p.m. and several friends came to meet us at the station and took us to Clark Hotel. Next noon, January 20, Pil and I went to visit Adelaide and Zurbuchen.<sup>119)</sup>

## January 20

Pil Chi Sung and I went to Anaheim to visit Adelaide. Koreans in Los Angeles gave me a reception that night.

## January 21

Tuesday. We went out to Mr. <C.H.> Min's house and had dinner there.

## January 22

Paid \$1,119.50 to Ahn Changho. This sum was the balance of some \$2000 raised in Hawaii for the purpose of sending a delegate to the Conference to be held in New York

116) Lee Beom-nyeong (1892-1982) and Lee Sun-gi (1883-1943) were members of the Dongji-hoe. They were among Rhee's many ardent supporters in the Korean community in Dinuba, California.

117) Kim Seung-hyun.

118) The typescript contains two entries for 19 January. Both entries have been reproduced here.

119) Rudolph Zurbuchen and his wife had been teachers at the Korean Central School in Hawaii.

representing small and subject nations, Park Yong Man was sent.<sup>120)</sup>

### January 23

Met Mr. Johnston on the street car and later visited Mr. Johnston at his office in Story Building.

### January 24

Left Los Angeles at 10 a.m. by Santa Fe route.

### January 24<sup>121)</sup>

I left Los Angeles on the Santa Fe train for Chicago at 10 a.m. Ahn Changho, Song Yang Whan, Yoon Byung hi<sup>122)</sup>, Cho Sung Whan and others came to see me off at the station.

### January 25

Pretty sick all day. Wrote some post cards.

### January 26

Wrote some letters and postal cards.

### January 27

Monday. Reached Chicago at 10:20 a.m. A large number of friends came to the station to meet me and we drove to the Hotel Plaza.

120) A 1917 conference of the League of Small and Subject Nationalities. See note for Marion Smith on 1 February 1919.

121) The typescript contains two entries for 24 January. Both entries have been reproduced here.

122) Yoon (윤병희, b. 1880), a key member of the Dongji-hoe in Los Angeles.

### January 29

Wednesday. Left Chicago at 9:05 a.m. for Detroit. <장평> or <장인명><sup>123)</sup> came to the station. Reached Detroit at 3:30 p.m. Park <봉래><sup>124)</sup> and <이용선><sup>125)</sup> came to the station and drove to Hotel Statler.

### January 31

Left Detroit at 7:10 p.m. <박봉래><sup>124)</sup> and <이용선><sup>125)</sup> came to the station to see me off.

### February 1

Arrived in N.Y. at 12:10 p.m. Went to McAlpin Hotel but Henry Chung<sup>126)</sup> was in Washington. I got room No. 1848 and went out to see <김현식> and <신성구><sup>127)</sup>. Sent a telegram to Chung.

Stayed in the room in the morning and went out to meet Miss Marion A. Smith<sup>128)</sup> and had a long talk. Received cablegram from Jaisohn and Chung February 2.

### February 3

T.S. Chang <장택상><sup>129)</sup>, stopping at Belview Stradford Hotel, Phila. and myself went

123) Jang Pyeong or Jang In-myeong. Jang In-myeong, Dongji-hoe member, served at the Korean Commission in Washington, D.C., in 1944.

124) Park Bong-rae (d. 1923) served as treasurer of the Detroit branch of the KNA.

125) Lee Yong-seon.

126) Henry Chung (later Henry DeYoung) was born in Korea but raised and educated in the U.S. He completed a Ph.D. at American University in Washington, D.C., in 1921. Chung worked closely with Rhee to raise Korea's profile in the U.S. from 1919-22, serving as a member of the Korean Commission. He authored several books on Korean history and U.S.-Korean relations.

127) Kim Heon-sik and Shin Seong-gu.

128) Smith was secretary of the League of Small and Subject Nationalities, an organization formed to support the self-determination of oppressed peoples. Smith and Rhee corresponded in 1917 when the League was organizing a conference in New York City. Their correspondence indicated that Rhee represented Korea on the League's council. See Lew, *Rhee Correspondence in English*, 1:14-15; 2:128, 130, 131.

129) Chang Taek-sang (1893-1969), a British-educated son of a Korean noble family, would be appointed chief of the Seoul Metropolitan Police, 1945-48, by the AMG. He would later serve as South Korea's foreign minister, 1948, and prime minister, 1952.

to Philadelphia and met them at the hotel. Four went out for supper and stayed at the hotel until 11 p.m. Then we came back to N.Y.

#### February 4

We reached N.Y. at 7 a.m. Henry Chung <정한경> came there about 10 p.m. No room in McAlpin or any other hotel and he and I stayed in the same room 1848. I began to feel more sick. <skin trouble.>

#### February 5

Chang, son of a rich man in S. Korea, recently arrived in N.Y. from London. Min Kiu Sik <민규식><sup>130)</sup>, son of Min Yung Whi, former prime minister, known as the richest man in Korea, was also in N.Y. at that time.

Dr. Jaisohn got hold of these two young men and proposed to start an English magazine with a capital of \$500,000—Chang and Min to give \$200,000 each; Dr. Rhee to raise \$100,000 in Hawaii and he himself to turn over his printing press and whole outfit. The two young men pledged and Henry Chung who would be assistant editor was more than glad and all combined together to put it up to me to start the campaign at once. I told them that I was sent by the people in Hawaii to represent Korea at the Peace Conference in Paris and I must finish this mission first before taking up any other proposition. They were all sore at me saying that going to Paris is a fool's errand and I must give up the idea. I said I started on that errand and must complete it, <first.

130) Min (b. 1888), an entrepreneur in Korea during the 1930s and 1940s, was a founding member of the Korean Democratic Party. He was abducted to North Korea in 1950.

#### February 13

During this time I proposed to hold a Korean Convention in Philadelphia and a parade to the Independent Hall.<sup>131)</sup> Circulars sent out to that effect signed by Jaisohn and myself.<sup>132)</sup> (see the report on Korean Congress.)<sup>133)</sup>

#### February 21

At 11 a.m. left Washington and reached Pocomoke at 8:20 p.m. Mr. Crockett met me at the station.

#### February 24

Leaving Pocomoke at 1 p.m. I returned to Washington Sanitarium at 10:10 p.m. Hahn In Sung came from Salem, Va. Saturday and was waiting. Ford<sup>134)</sup> letter said he had written Secretary Lane.

#### February 25

Called Secretary Lane's<sup>135)</sup> office but he was at White House with the President. His secretary, Cotter, said received Ford's letter and knew I was here. Tomorrow at 12:30 to come to see Lane.<sup>136)</sup>

131) Independence Hall in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania. The U.S. Declaration of Independence (1776) and Constitution (1787) were debated and adopted in this hall.

132) For the proceedings of this conference, see First Korean Congress, Held in the Little Theatre, 17th and Delancey Streets, April 14, 15, 16 (Philadelphia, 1919).

133) Probably the "Philadelphia Conference 1919 Addresses and Resolutions", in the "First Korean Congress in Philadelphia (1919)" folder, SRI, Seoul.

134) Alexander Hume Ford (1868–1945) was a notable resident of Hawaii and the founder of the Pan-Pacific Union, an organization designed to promote unity and harmony among the nations of the Pacific. Rhee was active in this organization and served as one of its officers in 1919. See "Aims of the Pan-Pacific Union Receive Government Backing", *Mid-Pacific Magazine*, June 1919.

135) Franklin Lane was secretary of Interior Dept.

136) Both Rhee and Alexander Ford had met Secretary Franklin Lane at least once before. Rhee had given a speech welcoming Lane to Hawaii on behalf of Ford's Pan-Pacific Union. See "Some Pan-Pacific Speeches", *Mid-Pacific Magazine*, September 1918.

## February 26

Went to the Interior Dept. on an appointment with the Secretary at 12:30 p.m. but he had been called away to the Capitol and I could see him next day. Mr. Henry Chung came from N.Y. Welcome Parade in Washington.

I moved from the Sanitorium to Washington Hotel. Met Mr. Chung at New Willard Hotel. Interviewed Lane. He said President couldn't give introduction to (Col.) House or Clemenceau.<sup>137)</sup> Lane gave me a letter to Polk. Interviewed (Assistant) Secretary of State, Polk. He would send cablegram to Paris and ask if we should go.

At night I wrote M. asking to let me know the name.

## March 1

Wrote to the President's Secretary, Tumulty.<sup>138)</sup> He replied that the matter had been handed over to the State Dept. by the President's direction.

## March 2

Tumulty's answer came Sunday.

## March 3

I called on Polk's secretary. He said reply would come Wednesday. I wrote to Tumulty asking for an interview with the President. He replied interview impossible and will bring the enclosed to the attention of the President.

## March 4

I wrote again asking him to request the President that he carry the memorial to the Peace [conference] and please answer.

137) Edward M. House (1858–1938), a close adviser to Woodrow Wilson on foreign affairs, and Georges Clemenceau (1841–1929), prime minister of France, 1917–20.

138) Joseph Patrick Tumulty.

## March 5

Called on the State Dept. and McEachran, Polk's secretary, said Polk<sup>139)</sup> is out but the Paris reply came and Polk would like to talk to me. Would call me up. Mr. Shaw called up and said Paris cable says it is "unfortunate" so can't give permit. I asked him to send memorial.<sup>140)</sup>

## March 8

Left Washington at 5 p.m. Saturday for Philadelphia where K.S. Minn and Jaisohn asked me to come. Mr. Wilcox says there was an article in the paper about our mission.

## March 9

Min[n] and I went to Jaisohn's house in Secane. We came back to Philadelphia at 11 p.m.

## March 10

Monday. Jaisohn brought a cable from Ahn Changho saying that Korea declared independent. (이상재, 길선주) and (손병희)<sup>141)</sup> were sent to Paris. Go to Paris to help them. Hyun soon<sup>142)</sup> in Shanghai. (See the file.)<sup>143)</sup>

139) Frank L. Polk was counselor of the State Department until July 1919, when he became under secretary of state.

140) This memorial, written by Rhee and Henry Chung and dated 25 February 1919, asked that Korea be temporarily made a mandatory of the League of Nations with a definite guarantee of independence in the near future. It is printed in Lew, *Rhee Correspondence in English*, 4:143–46.

141) Yi Sang-jae, Gil Seon-ju, and Son Byeong-hui. Gil (1869–1935) was a Christian minister in northern Korea and a signer of the Korean Declaration of Independence (1919). Son (1861–1922) was a leader of the Donghak Revolution (1894) and a founder of Cheondoism (천도교). Both Gil and Son were imprisoned for their participation in the March First Movement.

142) Hyun Soon (현순, 1880–1968), a Christian minister who served in Hawaii and Korea, was actively engaged in the March First Movement and, afterward, joined the KPG in Shanghai. In 1921, Rhee chose Hyun as a member of the Korean Commission, but the two men soon fell out over American recognition of the KPG. Hyun favored direct demands for recognition, whereas Rhee favored building public pressure through lobbying.

143) The reference is unclear. Rhee may be referring to his short account of the March First Movement. See Rhee, "The 1919 Movement", n.d., SRI, Seoul.

## March 12

Chang and Chung came to Phila. from N.Y. Jaisohn met us at the Colonnade and sent telegram to the State Dept. and cablegram to Lloyd George<sup>144</sup>. decided to start magazine in a small scale. Left Philadelphia for Washington, Minn and I.

## March 13

Minn Kiusick and I both left Philadelphia for Washington. We left Philadelphia at 3:25 p.m. and reached Washington at 6:45 p.m. The Ledger reporter interviewed.<sup>145</sup>

## March 17

Minn and I left Washington at 1 p.m. and arrived at Philadelphia at 4:10 p.m.

## March 18

Mr. Minn and I moved into the new office at 811 Weitman Building on Chestnut St. Left Philadelphia for N.Y. at 2 p.m.  
Left N.Y. at 12:45 a.m. and arrived in Philadelphia at 4.

## March 22

Left Philadelphia at 10 a.m. for N.Y. Had a conference at Chang's place and slept there. Min[n] came at night from Phila.

## March 23

Another conference. Left with Min[n] at 6 p.m. and reached Phila. at 8 p.m.

## March 29

Left Philadelphia at 1 p.m. Saturday with Mr. Min[n] for N.Y. and got there at 3 p.m.

144) David Lloyd George (1863–1945) was the Prime Minister of the United Kingdom, 1916–22.

145) "Appeal to U.S. to Aid Koreans", [Philadelphia] *Public Ledger*; 13 March 1919.

## March 30

Left N.Y. at 12:22 p.m. for Washington, leaving Min[n] in N.Y. and arrived in Washington at 5 p.m.

## March 31

Monday. Stayed in Wilcox's house<sup>146</sup> 321 Shepherd St. n.w.

## April 2

Left Washington at 10 a.m. Wednesday and reached Philadelphia at 12 p.m.

## April 5

News in papers of the Cabinet of provisional Gov. in Manchuria.

## April 10

Ahn Chang ho passed through Honolulu on his way to Shanghai. He left Cal. without notice.

## April 18

I left Philadelphia for Washington with Mr. (P.K.) Yoon at 5:15 p.m. and arrived in Washington at 8 p.m.

## April 19

Saturday. I went to the State Dept. and asked them to see if they would renew my application for passport. Then I dropped it.

146) Albert W. and Jennie V. Wilcox were supporters of Rhee's educational activities in Hawaii. See Jennie Wilcox to Rhee, 8 July 1912, in Lew, *Rhee Correspondence in English*, 2:164–69.

## April 21

Lawrence Todd<sup>147)</sup> is engaged for \$20.00 per week temporarily. Left Washington at 5 p.m. and reached Philadelphia at 8.

## April 22

I left Philadelphia at 5 p.m. and returned to Washington at 8:15 p.m.

## May 2

Friday. Left Washington at 1:05 p.m. and reached N.Y. at 6:30 p.m.

## May 4

Left N.Y. at 10 a.m. Sunday and reached Philadelphia at 12 o'clock. Left Philadelphia at 12:30 for Secane.

## May 5

Left Philadelphia at 8:30 a.m. and arrived at Washington at 11:30 a.m.

## May 15

Left Washington at 11 a.m. for Philadelphia to attend the meeting at Reading.

## May 16

Left Reading at 8 a.m. and reached Philadelphia at 10:25.

Left Philadelphia at 11:38 a.m. and reached Washington at 3 p.m.

147) Laurence Todd (1882–1957) was a journalist and former secretary for Representative Meyer London (Socialist Party–NY). Todd was a socialist and an admirer of the Soviet Union. He would serve as the Washington correspondent for the Soviet TASS news agency, 1933–52. Rhee hired Todd to do publicity work for the Korean cause in 1919. This engagement was short lived but they remained in contact. See Todd to Rhee, 30 December 1919, in Lew, *Rhee Correspondence in English*, 2:320–22.

## June 22

Sunday. Left Washington at 1:05 p.m. with Min[n] and arrived in N.Y. at 7 p.m.

## June 26

Left N.Y. City for Philadelphia at 1 p.m. with Mr. K. Min[n] who goes directly to Washington. Reached Philadelphia at 4 and left at 7. Washington at 10:30.

## July 17

Legation<sup>148)</sup> moved into 1804 Mass. Ave., Washington, D.C.<sup>149)</sup>

## October 10

Leaving Washington at 11:10 a.m. and due in Philadelphia at 2:30 p.m. Spoke at Camden, Y.M.C.A. at night and stopped at Adelphia Hotel, Philadelphia.

## October 13

Monday. With Lyhm <임병직(my secretary)><sup>150)</sup> and Wiederhold, I left Philadelphia at 4:10 p.m. and stopped at Hotel Sterling. That night we spoke at Y.M.C.A. Jaisohn, I, Hulbert and Wiederhold. We left Trenton at 11:35 p.m. and reached Philadelphia at 1 a.m.

148) Korean Commission was known in Washington as Legation.

149) Rhee established the Korean Commission in Washington, D.C., (1919) as the headquarters for Korean lobbying activities in the U.S. The office also served as an unrecognized embassy of the KPG.

150) Im Byung-jik (Ben C. Limb or Lyhm, 1893–1976) was an American-educated Korean who served as Rhee's secretary and aide during the 1920s and 1940s. During Rhee's presidency he served as foreign minister, 1948–51, and as South Korea's representative to the United Nations, 1950–60.

## October 15

Wednesday. We left Philadelphia at 3 p.m. and reached Princeton at 4:30 p.m. We called on West and Erdman<sup>151</sup>) and spoke at Alexander Hall at 8 p.m. We left Princeton at 11 p.m. and reached Philadelphia at 1:15 a.m. Took 3 a.m. train and returned to Washington at 8 a.m.

## October 21

Left Washington at 9:10 a.m. Tuesday and arrived at Philadelphia at 12:25 p.m. Left Philadelphia at 3 p.m. and arrived at Atlantic City at 4 with Dr. Jaisohn. Stopped at Chalfonte Hotel. Mr. Leods spoke at High School.

## October 22

We left Atlantic City at 9:30 a.m. and took Washington train at 11:30 at W. Philadelphia. Reached Washington at 3 p.m.

## November 6

At 11:10 a.m. I left Washington with B.C. Lyhm. Reached Philadelphia at 2:30 p.m. and left at 7 p.m. Arrived in Utica N.Y. at 7 next morning.

## November 7

Friday. Arrived in Utica at 7 a.m. Stopping at the Hotel Utica, I spoke to the Rotary Club luncheon—at noon. Mr. Miller, the president, presided.

## November 8

Saturday at 9:50 a.m. we left Utica, N.Y. on the N.Y. Central. Left N.Y. 4:50 p.m. and reached Washington at 10:20 p.m.

<sup>151</sup>) Charles R. Erdman (1866–1966), a professor of theology at Princeton Seminary.

## November 11

Tuesday B.C. Lyhm and I left Washington at 7:15 p.m. for Erie, Pa.

## November 12

We arrived in Erie at 9:40 a.m. and stopped at Hotel Lawrence. I spoke at the Rotary and Chamber of Commerce at 12:15. In the afternoon at 4:15 p.m. I addressed the Academy High School; John C. Diehl, principal. We left Erie at 8 p.m.

## November 13

We reached Buffalo at 10:30 and stopped at Hotel Iroquois. I spoke at the Rotary club luncheon at Hotel Statler. Elias, president. Left Buffalo at 2:30 p.m. and reached Niagara at 3:50. Stopped at Clifton House.

## November 14

Friday we left Niagara at 7:05 p.m. and reached Erie at 10:30. Stopped at Lawrence Hotel.

## November 15

Saturday we left Erie at 9:30 a.m. and arrived at Cincinnati at 8 p.m. Eastern Time and stopped at the Sinton Hotel. Met Halsey<sup>152</sup>) at night.

## November 16

I spoke at Wyoming Presbyterian Church in the afternoon and at 7th Presbyterian Church in the evening. Halsey, pastor.

<sup>152</sup>) J. Halsey was a student at Princeton when I was there.

## November 17

I spoke at the Presbytery in First Presbyterian Church. We left Cincinnati at 12:45 p.m. on the B. & B. line and reached Washington at 7:20 a.m. Nov. 18.

## November 18

Lyhm and I arrived in Washington at 7:20 a.m.

## December 4

At 9:20 a.m. I with B.C. Lyhm left Washington, D.C. on the way to Oberlin, O[hi]o.

## December 5

Arrived at Cleveland at 12:30 a.m. Hollenden Hotel. Left Cleveland at 9:30 a.m. and arrived in Oberlin at 11 a.m. Had a conference with S.A. Beck<sup>153</sup>. Spoke at Oberlin College. President King presided.

## December 6

Saturday we left Oberlin at 9:45 a.m. and arrived in Cleveland at 11 a.m.

## December 8

We left Cleveland at 6:15 p.m. Monday.

153) Stephen Ambrose Beck (백서암), a Methodist missionary to Korea, 1899–1919. Following the March First Movement, Beck carried photographs of Japanese atrocities back to the United States. In 1919 he became the Secretary of the League of Friends of Korea, a pro-Korean independence grassroots organization founded in Philadelphia in May 1919. By 1921 the league claimed 25,000 members (actual number may have been lower) in 14 branches across the United States. It also had branches in London and Paris. Beck became a popular lecturer and his lectures were cited by Senator George W. Norris (R-NE) in debates on the ratification of the Versailles Treaty in 1919. See Norris, "The Present Treaty", *Congressional Record*, 66th Cong., 1st Sess. (15 July 1919), 2593–95.

## December 9

Tuesday we arrived in Philadelphia at 8:30 a.m. Stopped at Adelphia Hotel. Spoke at Haddonfield, N.J.

## December 10

I left Philadelphia at 12 o'clock for N.Y. and arrived in N.Y. at 2 p.m. Stopped at Hotel McAlpin.

## December 12

I, with Mr. Beck, left N.Y. at 12:20 p.m. and arrived in Washington at 5:30.

## CHAPTER 2

1920

January 10

At 7:30 p.m. I left Washington, D.C. with B.C. Lyhm on a speaking tour through N.Y.

January 11

We arrived at Boston 8:30 a.m. and we were met by You chan Yang<sup>154)</sup> and Gay bong Kim. Stayed at George Kendall's house, 32 Highland St., Cambridge, Mass. Beck and I spoke at Mt. Vernon Church and later I spoke at Boston University.

January 13

I spoke at the Boston Theological <Seminary> at noon. At 11 p.m. I left for N.Y. and Lyhm for Washington.

January 14

Reached N.Y. at 7 a.m. Grand Hotel.

January 15

Left N.Y. at 11 a.m. and reached Philadelphia at 1 p.m. Left Philadelphia at 3:20 p.m. and reached Washington at 8 p.m.

154) Yang (양유찬, You Chan Yang, 1897 – 1975), a graduate of the Korean Compound School in Hawaii, would serve as Korean ambassador to the United States, 1951 – 60; Korean representative to the United Nations, 1951 – 58; and chief Korean representative in the “Korea–Japan Talks” to normalize relations, 1951 – 53.

March 7

3 p.m. Lyhm and I left Washington, D.C. for S. Carolina.

March 8

At 9:30 a.m. we reached Charleston, S.C. Stopped at Timrod Inn. 8:30 p.m. spoke at Red Circle Club.

March 9

12:25 p.m. Left Charleston, S.C.

March 10

10 a.m. reached Savannah, Ga. De Soto Hotel. Spoke at Great Savannah Commercial Club and left at 8:15 p.m. for Washington, D.C.

March 11

4 p.m. reached Washington D.C.

March 17

6 p.m. left Washington for Denver.

March 18

3 p.m. reached Chicago; left 11 p.m. by Burlington route.

March 19

Met Henry Chung at Lincoln, Nebr. R.R. station. Reached Denver 7:30 a.m. Hotel Shirley.

## March 20

3 p.m. Spoke at Grace M.E. Church open forum meeting.

## March 21

9:30 a.m. spoke to Y.M.C.A. secretaries with Luth. 11:30 a.m. to M.E. ministers' meeting; 12 o'clock to Women's Club; 8 p.m. Korean meeting.

## March 22

12:15 p.m. spoke to Denver University and later "Ad" Club and at night visited the Wellers<sup>155)</sup> with Chung.

## March 23

Visited Korean Farm with Chung, Lim and Ahn.

## March 24

4 p.m. we left Denver and arrived at Boulderado Hotel in Boulder University town. Entertained by Wiley.

## March 25

Auto trip to Colorado Canyon. Left for Superior, Wyo, at 8 p.m.

## March 26

〈백낙관(Paik Nak Kwan)〉 met us at Rock Springs. Reached Superior at 4 p.m. Next day we had a meeting attended by 25 Koreans.

<sup>155)</sup> Likely Orville A. Weller and his family. The Wellers were Methodist missionaries to Korea from Denver, Colorado.

## March 28

Sunday morning we had a service. Left Superior for Denver and Washington, D.C. at 1 p.m.

## March 30

9:30 p.m. reached Chicago. La Salle Hotel.

## March 31

5:45 left Chicago by B. & O. Line for Washington D.C.

## April 1

4:40 p.m. arrived at Washington. Met by Lyhm 〈임병직〉 and Sihm 〈신형호〉<sup>156)</sup> at station.

## April 19

9:15 a.m. left Washington for Boston.

## April 20

8:30 a.m. arrived at Boston. Hotel Somerset. Spoke at Boston University. Dr. Chandler presiding. Hulbert also spoke.

## April 21

11:30 p.m. left Boston.

## April 22

7:30 a.m. reached N.Y. Hotel McAlpin Annex.

<sup>156)</sup> Shin Hyeong-ho (Hanal Narasin or Narasin Hanal, b. 1891) worked as a teacher at the Korean Youth Military Academy in Hastings, Nebraska, 1914. He served as president of the Chicago branch of the KNA, 1918, and as secretary of the Korean Commission, 1922. Shin was a founding member of the Dongji-hoe.

## April 23

Hulbert and I spoke at Mrs. Oliver Lyford's residence in Englewood, N.J.

## April 26

5:55 p.m. left N.Y. and reached Washington at 11:30 p.m.

## May 14

8 p.m. Left Washington for Des Moines, Ia. Marcella Syn<sup>157)</sup> also going at the same time.

## May 16

8:30 a.m. reached Des Moines. Hotel Brown. Met Yung Sup Kim <김영섭> and Oh Ki Sun <오기선>.

## May 24

10:30 a.m. left Des Moines for Washington. On the way stopped at Chicago, Detroit, and Cleveland.

## May 28

9:30 a.m. reached Washington, D.C.

## June 2

5 p.m. left Washington and arrived in N.Y. at 10:15 p.m. Hotel Commodore.

157) Syn was one of the first graduates of Ewha School, a Methodist mission school for girls in Korea. She came to the U.S. to attend the University of Pennsylvania with the assistance of American supporters of Korean missions. After the March First Movement, Syn was an active member of the Korean Relief Society. She lectured widely in support of the society. See "Miss Marcella Syn to Speak in Yonkers Tomorrow", *Yonkers Statesman*, 29 January 1921.

## June 5

6 p.m. left N.Y. with Myung Dong <明東> and Sihm Hyung ho arrived at Belmar, N.J.  
8 p.m. Met by Elizabeth Hyre and Mrs. L.G. Starks. Stopped at 609 9th Ave.

## June 6

6 p.m. left Belmar with Myung Dong and Sihm for N.Y. I stopped overnight at Asbury Park, Coleman Hotel.

## June 7

8:15 a.m. left Asbury Park, reached Philadelphia at 10:45 a.m. Stopped at Jaisohn's.

## June 8

5 p.m. left Philadelphia and reached Washington at 10:30 p.m.

## June 12

7:30 a.m. left Washington. Met S.A. Beck at Harrisburg station. Left Harrisburg at 12:30 p.m.

## June 13

12:20 a.m. reached Cleveland. Hollenden Hotel.

## June 14

Left Cleveland 12:33 p.m. with Nodie<sup>158)</sup> and Shincil and Young Soon<sup>159)</sup>. They returned to school and I reached Chicago at 7:30 p.m. Congress Hotel.

158) Nodie Kim (김혜숙, Nodie Sohn, Nodie Dora Kimhaekim, 1898–1972) was an Oberlin College-educated Korean independence activist. Following the March First Movement, Kim rose to prominence for speeches she gave at the First Korean Congress (1919) in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania. She was active in the Korean Ladies Relief Society and the League of Friends of Korea. Kim was a lifelong supporter of Rhee and served during his administration in the Office of Procurement, 1953–55. For more on Kim's relationship with Rhee, see Lew, *The Making of the First Korean President*, 192–93.

159) 3 [students] from Honolulu, studying at Oberlin.

## June 16

Left Chicago on Union Pacific train for San Francisco—8 or 7 p.m.

## June 19

3 p.m. reached Sacramento; met S.K. Lee at station. We stopped at Hotel Chinud. Pastor Kim et al. gave us a welcome reception.

## June 20

1:30 p.m. we left Sacramento and reached San Francisco at 5:30 p.m. We stopped at Keystone Hotel.

## June 21

At night there was a welcome reception held at Korean Church, Kang Yung so<sup>160</sup> presiding.

## June 22

4 p.m. Henry Chung and I got on S.S. Manoa at pier 32. Many friends saw us off at the wharf.

## June 29

8 a.m. arrived in Honolulu. Welcomed by a large number of people. Hotel Alexander Young.

## July 12

Left Young Hotel and went to Puunui Ave. no. 2456. Honolulu.

## October 12

B.C. Lyhm arrived from the State[s] on the S.S. Matsonia.

<sup>160</sup> Kang (강영소, 1886–1934) was a founding member of the KNA.

## October 28

Went to Kawela Bay with Kiu sic Kim (김규식)<sup>161</sup>, B.C. Lyhm, Palin Low (노백린)<sup>162</sup> and Dong ho Choi (최동호).

## November 5

Returned to Honolulu from Kawela. Stopped at Blaisdell.

## November 6

Moved to Hotel Moana.

## November 8

I came to Mr. (William) Borthwick's<sup>163</sup> from the Moana.

## November 16

B.C. Lyhm and I left Honolulu for Shanghai by S.S. West Hika.<sup>164</sup> 8 a.m. "Seen" by the crew next morning.

## November 17

(Lyhm & I were) known as father and son. Poems were composed in Chinese along

<sup>161</sup> Kim Kyu-sik (Kimm Kiusic, 1881–1950) was a protégé of Horace G. Underwood. In 1904, Kim was sent to the U.S. to be educated at Roanoke College and Princeton. After the March First Movement he served as the KPG's representative in Paris and as a member of the Korean Commission, 1919–20. He became vice-president of the KPG, 1944. Although Kim worked closely with Rhee, the two men frequently clashed over policy issues both before and after Korea's liberation, Kim was abducted to North Korea in 1950.

<sup>162</sup> No Baek-lin (Palin K. Law, Roh Paik-lin, Pak Yin Roe, 1876–1926) served as the KPG's defense minister, 1919–22, and as prime minister, 1922–24, 1925. He was the driving force for establishing a Korean aviation school at Willows, California, 1920–21.

<sup>163</sup> Borthwick was a former member of the Hawaii Territorial House of Representatives and served as Hawaii's tax commissioner, 1934–50. He was also the owner of a mortuary.

<sup>164</sup> Freight boat—Borthwick made the arrangement for us to travel on that boat.

this voyage describing the experiences.<sup>165)</sup> (see the collection of my poems in Chinese.)<sup>166)</sup>

#### December 2

We passed some islands.

#### December 5

10 a.m. we landed at Shanghai and went to Men Yuen Hotel (孟淵旅館. Still acting as Chinese in order to avoid attention of the Japanese. Wrote a letter to 張鵬.<sup>167)</sup> When he came we decided to let the Provisional Gov. know my whereabouts.)

#### December 7

We left Men Yuen Hotel and went to Burlington Hotel. (The Provisional Gov. made the arrangement for me to stay in that hotel.)

#### December 12

I left Burlington Hotel and went to Rev. J.W. Crofoot's<sup>168)</sup> 3 Route de Zikawei, Shanghai. (A 7th Day Baptist missionary. 여운형<sup>169)</sup> arranged for me a stay there.)

165) The entries for 8, 16, and 17 November briefly record how Rhee and Lyhm were smuggled out of Hawaii on their way to Shanghai, where Rhee would take up the presidency of the KPG. Rhee had been elected as the first president of the KPG in 1919, but he postponed traveling to Shanghai because he thought his presence in Washington, D.C., would be more useful to the Korean cause. Rhee also feared that he might be intercepted by Japanese authorities in transit and arrested. With the help of Borthwick, Rhee and Lyhm were smuggled onto the SS *West Hika* without passports, tickets, or other travel documents. The plot involved coffins from Borthwick's mortuary, but it is unlikely that Rhee and Lyhm were ever in the coffins as the American press reported in the 1940s. See Robert Oliver, *Syngman Rhee: The Man Behind the Myth* (New York: Dodd Mead, 1954), 149–55. Other accounts can be found in the folders "Biographical Essays on or of SR" and "Korean Provisional Government", SRI, Seoul.

166) This collection, entitled Cheyeokjip (체역집, 替役集), can be found in Young-ick Lew, ed., 이화장소장 우남이승만문서, vol. 2 [Ihwajang sojang Unam Yi Süng-man munso] (Seoul: Chungang Ilbosa, 1998), 226–28.

167) Jang Bung (장봉, Peter Chang, 1877–1955), a KPG official.

168) Jay William Crofoot (1874–1960), a Seventh Day Baptist missionary. Crofoot's house was in Shanghai's French settlement, where extraterritoriality laws offered Rhee some protection from arrest and extradition.

169) Yeo Un-hyeong (Lyuh Woon-hyung, 1886–1947) was a member of the KPG and an independence activist. He was arrested by Japanese authorities and imprisoned several times for his actions. Yeo, who joined the Korean Communist Party in 1920, would serve as the chief organizer of the short-lived Korean People's Republic in August 1945. He represented the center-left faction of Korean politics in the post-liberation era until his assassination in 1947.

## CHAPTER 2

1921

#### March 5

Peter Chang or (장봉) and myself left Shanghai in the 9:30 a.m. train and reached Nanking or (남경) at 3:30 p.m. Mrs. P.L. Gillett met us at the R.R. station and drove us to her home, Gillett being sick. (Gillett was formerly Y.M.C.A. secretary in Seoul.)<sup>170)</sup>

#### March 10

11 p.m. we left Nanking and reached Shanghai March 11 at 7 a.m.

#### Pre-March 25?

(국무원 or Cabinet asked me to resign as president. I told them that I would if they choose my successor and agree to support him. They were holding a big luncheon meeting at Dai Dong Hotel, 大東旅館 to discuss the situation.)

#### March 25

12:30 p.m. with Mr. and Mrs. J.W. Crofoot I left Shanghai by train and rode up to Nansiang (남상(南翔)) where we took a steam launch that took us to Kating (가정현 유하(嘉定縣 劉河)). Drs. Sinclair and Crandall<sup>171)</sup> sent coolies to the landing and met us.

We walked to the 7th Day Baptist Mission hospital (혜중병원). We reached there about 8:30 p.m.

170) Philip Loring Gillett (길예태, 1872–1938) had been a colleague of Rhee at the Seoul YMCA.

171) Likely Drs. Mariam Sinclair and Grace Crandall, medical missionaries to China.

### March 27

Easter Sunday at 12:15 p.m. I left Linho (용화 or 龍華寺) with a wheelbarrow man and walked to Ka Ting, which is about 3 hours' good walk. Arrived at the landing place at 3:30 p.m. The steam launch reached Nansiang at 5:30 p.m. By 6:30 p.m. I reached Shanghai at 8:00 p.m.

### May 14

I went to Soochow (소주(蘇州)) with Mr. (신익희(申翼熙))<sup>172</sup>. Took supper at Silver Inn and went to R.R. Hotel where Mr. Sihm and I stayed overnight. Next morning we met the Crofoots and went out to visit the following places: (劉園, 西園, 寒山寺)<sup>173</sup>. By evening train May 15, we came back to Shanghai.

### May 19

I bade goodbye to friends and went to Woosung (吳淞) and stopped at Fort Hotel.

### May 24

I came back to the Crofoots in Shanghai.

### May 28

I came to the wharf with Mr. J.W. Crofoot and I got on the S.S. Colombia at 10 p.m. The S.S. Colombia sailed at 5 a.m. May 29.

172) Sin Ik-hui (Shin Ik-hee, 1892 – 1956) was an independence activist who held several positions in the KPG in Shanghai and, later, in the National Assembly of the ROK. Sin intended to challenge Rhee for the ROK presidency in 1956 but died prior to election day.

173) Lingering Garden (Liu Yuan), West Garden (Si Yuan), Hanshan Temple (Hanshan Si).

### June 2

At 2 p.m. we landed at Manila. Having no passport I was not allowed to land, (the immigration officers refused to let me go ashore) but through Bergholz's<sup>174</sup> influence I stopped at Manila Hotel.

### June 7

At 8:30 p.m. I moved from Manila Hotel to Dr. Steinmetz<sup>175</sup> on Isaac Peral [St].

### June 9

At 8 a.m. I left Manila by the R.R. and reached a small station called Damortis and thence to Baguio by auto, arriving at Baguio station at 5:30 p.m. I stopped at Pines Hotel.

### June 12

Left Baguio at 7 a.m. and returned to Manila at 5 p.m.

### June 14

At 11 p.m. I left Manila and went aboard the S.S. Granite State which sailed about 5 a.m. June 15, 1921.

### June 29

At 8 a.m. I landed in Honolulu. Met by our people at Pier 7. Borthwick was out to meet me.

174) Leo Allen Bergholz (b. 1857) was the American Consul in Seoul in 1919 during the March First Movement. His dispatches to the State Department emphasized the peaceful nature of the independence demonstrations and the brutality of the Japanese response. Bergholz collected and forwarded evidence of Japanese atrocities, including accounts of the destruction of Korean towns and photographs of Korean flogging victims. He was serving as American Consul to Canton, China, in 1921 and travelled to Manila on the same boat as Rhee.

175) Harry H. Steinmetz, a Baptist medical missionary to the Philippines.

## August 10

At 10 a.m. I left Honolulu for San Francisco. Many people came out to see me off at pier 15. Hugh H. Cynn (attending Pan Pacific Conference) was out and on my way from the house, we stopped to call on Dr. McCaughey.<sup>176)</sup>

## August 16

At 8:30 a.m. I arrived at San Francisco. Before landing, news reporter took pictures and interviewed me.<sup>177)</sup> I went to the Clift hotel and the Pathe News and International News Weekly took moving pictures in the Golden Gate Park.

## August 19

At 11 p.m. I left San Francisco for Dinuba and arrived at Fresno where we stayed overnight. A welcome reception was held at Dinuba Korean Church. Stopped at Hotel Fresno.

## August 20

At 1:15 p.m. I left Fresno with P.K. Yoon (윤병구) and arrived at Sacramento at 9 p.m. and stayed at Hotel Sacramento.

## August 21

At 2 p.m. I left Sacramento for Chicago.

<sup>176)</sup> Vaughan MacCaughey (sometimes McCaughey) was the Superintendent of Public Instruction for the territory of Hawaii.  
<sup>177)</sup> The interview appeared in newspapers across the United States. See "Koreans Insist on Independence", *Oakland Tribune*, 17 August 1921. In the interview, Rhee explained that he was returning to Washington, D.C., to represent the Korean people at the Washington Naval Conference. Because this conference was to be held on American soil, Rhee hoped that Korean representatives would not be "smothered" by Japanese diplomats as they had been at the Paris Peace Conference (1919).

## August 24

At 3 a.m. the Burlington train passed Pueblo and Wooh (홍태)<sup>178)</sup> and other people met me at the Station.

At 7 a.m. we stopped at Denver; had breakfast with the boys there and left at 10:30 a.m. The train was about 11 hours behind time on account of the electric storm which caused the wash-out on the west side of Grand Junction, Colorado and which wrecked a train coming behind us.

## August 25

At 3 p.m. I reached Chicago and was met by many Koreans at the station. I stopped at Hotel Congress.

## August 26

At 10:30 p.m. I left Chicago by B. & O. Line.

## August 27

At 10:30 p.m. I arrived at Washington, D.C. and was met by all our people at the depot. I went to Hotel Portland.

## October 6

At 9 a.m. left Washington with H.H. Sihn and arrived at N.Y. at 2:20 p.m. where we were met by a number of Koreans who came to the station to meet us. That night we held our meeting at the Waldorf-Astoria Hotel banquet hall.

## October 9

At 3:25 we left N.Y. and reached Washington at 8:25 p.m.

<sup>178)</sup> Woo Hung-tae.

## November 1

Sihn Hyung ho and I left the Portland Hotel and moved into the house 1327—16 St. N.W. Washington, D.C.

## November 22

Senator Thomas<sup>179)</sup>, Dolph<sup>180)</sup> <sup>181)</sup>, myself and Pyngsoo Min (민대식's son)<sup>182)</sup> went to Philadelphia at 3 p.m. to attend the mass meeting.

**November 23** At 8:30 a.m. Senator Thomas (Charles) P.S. Min and myself left Philadelphia and arrived at Washington, D.C. at 11:30 a.m.

179) Charles Spalding Thomas (1849–1934) was a former governor and Democratic senator from Colorado. He argued for a reservation to the Versailles Treaty recognizing Korea's right to be independent. Thomas was hired by the Korean Commission as an additional legal counsel during the Washington Naval Conference.

180) Fred Dolph was our legal Counselor.

181) Fred A. Dolph (1870–c.1927) was a lawyer and inventor who served as legal counsel to the Korean Commission from 1919 until the mid-1920s. His briefs on the illegality of the Japanese annexation of Korea were widely circulated by the Commission. Senators sympathetic towards Korea had the briefs read into the *Congressional Record* during the debate over the Versailles Treaty in 1919 and the Washington Naval Conference of 1921–22. See Seldon P. Spencer, "The Korean Question", *Congressional Record*, 66th Cong., 1st Sess. (19 September 1919), 5595–5608; and Charles S. Thomas and Fred A. Dolph, "Korea's Appeal to the Conference on Limitation of Armament", *S. Doc. No. 109*, 67th Cong. 2d Sess. (1922).

182) Min Dae-sik (d. 1951) and his son Min Byung-su (1900–1969) were the son and grandson of Min Yeong-hwi (1852–1935), one of the richest men in Korea. They both worked in the family banking business in Korea and after 1945 were accused of collaboration with the Japanese.

## CHAPTER 2

1922

## January 20

At 11 a.m. I left for N.Y. and arrived there at 4 p.m. Met by Baik Nam Chil at the Pen. R.R. station. I stopped at Hotel Pa.

## January 23

At 8:10 a.m. I left N.Y. and reached Washington at 1:30 p.m.

## February 6

Left Washington at 3 p.m. and reached N.Y. at 8:10 p.m. Paik Namchil met me at the Pennsylvania Station and I stopped at McAlpin Hotel.

## February 8

Left N.Y. at 10:10 a.m. and arrived at Washington at 3:45 p.m.

## February 15

The Korea Mission House 1327—16th St. n.w. Washington D.C. closed up and I was living in that house with [Henry] Chung.

## February 20

At 3:30 p.m. I left Washington on Pa. lines destined for Chicago. P.S. Min and Y.C. Lee (이용직)<sup>183)</sup> came to the station with me.

183) Lee Yong-jik.

## February 21

Arrived in Chicago at 9:55 a.m. Stopped at Congress [hotel]. Had a big meeting at the Korean Club house.

## February 22

At 8:10 p.m. I left Chicago on Overland Limited train for Sacramento, Cal.

## February 25

At 10:30 a.m. I arrived at Sacramento, Cal. and was met by many Korean men and women at the station. We drove to <권태영>'s house and after taking lunch at Moon Yang Mok's<sup>184)</sup> house, we left Sacramento at 1:30 p.m. on the auto owned by Kwon Tai Young <권태영> who drove the car, escorted by <박희성><sup>185)</sup> his brother-in-law and <안영렬><sup>186)</sup>. On the way we stopped at Annie Kim's and we met her husband and Helen Chun who lived by Annie in Stockton.

At 9 p.m. we arrived in Fresno, Cal. having traveled over 200 miles on the auto. Soon-ki Lee met us in the hotel and we all roomed in Fresno Hotel.

## February 26

Ahn Yung Yul, Yoon Pyung Koo, and Kim Tak left with Chi pum Hong in his auto in Fresno and came to Dinuba at 5 p.m. and stopped at Barbis Hotel with Kim Chung Chin and Ahn Yung Yul. We had a meeting at the Korean Church.

## March 1

We had a big celebration in Dinuba.<sup>187)</sup>

184) Moon (문양목, 1869-1940), a former revolutionary in the Donghak movement, was a KNA official and publisher of Rhee's *The Spirit of Independence* and Park Yong-man's *Guide for Proper Behavior of Soldiers*.

185) Park Hui-seong (Howard S. Park, 1896-1937) was the brother of Park Hui-do, one of the thirty-three signers of the Korean Declaration of Independence (1919). He trained at the Korean aviation school in Willows, California.

186) Ahn Yeong-ryeol.

187) The third anniversary of the March First Movement.

## March 2

We left Dinuba, Ahn Yung yul, Hong Chi Pum and Kim Taik. About 3 p.m. we reached Madera, Cal. and stopped overnight in the Rosedale Hotel.

## March 3

We left Madera at 7:30 a.m. Travelling all day on Hong Chi Pum's automobile, we came to San Francisco at 7 p.m. and registered at Hotel Stewart.

## March 4

We had a meeting at a church (Chinese).

## March 5

At 11 a.m. Kim Tak, Choi Eung Sun and I left San Francisco on Hong's auto driven by him while Ahn Yung Yul, Lim Chung Koo and Park Hi Sung traveled on the R.R. train for Sacramento.

At 5 p.m. we reached Sacramento, met by Kwon Yung Tai and several others on auto. We stopped at Sacramento Hotel. At 7 p.m. we had a meeting.

## March 6

At 2:30 p.m. Hong, Kim Tak and myself, left Sacramento on Hong's auto and reached Willows at 6 p.m. I was entertained at Kim Chong Lim's house. We had a meeting at Kim's house at 8 p.m. Kim was known as Korean Rice King.<sup>188)</sup>

188) Kim Jong-im (김종림, 1886-1939) immigrated to the United States as a railway laborer but later made a fortune in agriculture in California. He was a major financial contributor to the Korean independence movement and a member of the Dongji-hoe.

### March 7

We left Willows at 11 a.m. and stopping at Maxwell and Sacramento for a few moments, we reached Stockton, Cal. at 6 p.m. and registered at Hotel Stockton.

In the evening we had a meeting at Kim Chong Hak's hotel. Kim Tak and Choi Eung Sun stopped at Lincoln Hotel.

### March 8

At 10 a.m. we left Stockton on Hong's auto and arrived at Dinuba at 6 p.m. and stopped at Barbis Hotel.

### March 9

At 9 a.m. Mr. Hong and I in his auto left Dinuba for Los Angeles with Kim Chung Chin. At 8:30 p.m. we reached Los Angeles and stopped at Rosslyn Hotel.

### March 10

At 8:30 we had a meeting at the Korean Mission house in Los Angeles.

### March 11

At 11:30 a.m. C.P. Hong and Chung Chin Kim left Los Angeles and drove over the Mojave Mountain in heavy snow and arrived at Bakersfield, Cal. at 9 p.m. We stopped at Southern Hotel. Hong left Bakersfield at 4 a.m. next morning for Dinuba to attend Sunday service. The distance between Los Angeles and Dinuba is 220 miles.

### March 13

At 1:15 a.m. I took the Southern Pacific train leaving Bakersfield for Seattle and reached Sacramento at 9:15 a.m. At Sacramento, Moon Yang Mok, Ahn Yung Yul, Kwon Yung Tai and Park Hi Sung met me at the station and I left Sacramento at 1:15 p.m.

### March 14

At 8:15 p.m. I reached Portland, <Oreg>. Robert Smith came on the same train from Sacramento to Portland. I stopped to see L. Tracey at the Good Samaritan Hospital in Portland.

At 11:15 p.m. I left Portland on the S.P. train.

### March 15

At 7:10 a.m. I reached Seattle and changing <the train at> the R.R. station I left Seattle at 9:15 a.m. and reached Yakima, Washington at 3:30 p.m. Many Koreans came to meet me at the R.R. station and the local commissioners escorted me to the Hotel Donnelly. At 7 p.m. we had a meeting in the Korean meeting house.

### March 16

At 3:35 p.m. I left Yakima; two men, Park Ho Ken and Kim, escorting. At 12:20 p.m. we reached Seattle and we were led to New Richmond Hotel as previously arranged by the people there. Held a meeting at 11:20 p.m. in the Chinese <Kuomintang> house.

### March 17

At 3:20 p.m. left Seattle with Kil In Yung <Kil Sun Choo's son> reached Portland at 10:30 p.m. Met at the station by Pil Chi Sung and Kil <In Yung>. I stopped at Hotel Benson.

### March 18

At 7:15 p.m. I left Portland and changing trains at Spokane and Garrison, I reached Butte, Montana at 9:15 p.m.

### March 19

Many Koreans met me at the station and escorted me to Hotel Butte.

## March 21

At 7:15 a.m. I left Butte. Two men saw me off at the station.

## March 22

At 6 a.m. I arrived at Rock Springs, Wyo, and by auto there from, I reached Superior, Wyo. at 10:30 a.m. We, Paik Man soon<sup>189)</sup>, Park Kil moon and another man, left Superior on Paik's auto at 6:30 p.m. right after a meeting in the camp and came to Rock Springs where I took the train at 9:15 p.m.

## March 23

At 10 a.m. I arrived in Denver where several men met me at the station. We had a meeting in a farm house in the morning and another gathering at <김영철>'s<sup>190)</sup> place in the afternoon.

At 11:30 p.m. I left Denver on Northwestern R.R. train.

## March 25

At 7:20 a.m. I reached Chicago and met by many friends who came to the station to meet me. I stopped at Hotel Congress.

## March 26

At 5 p.m. I left Chicago for South Bend, Indiana, Yi Tai Yung, Kang Yung Sup and Hahn In Sung coming on to escort me.

At 7 p.m. we reached South Bend and Yi Yil and Kim Seung Che came to the station to meet me. They had a reservation made in the Hotel Oliver and I went there. At one thirty o'clock the following morning we held a meeting in the Korean restaurant.

189) Probably should read "Paik Man soo."

190) Kim Yeong-cheol.

## March 27

At 10:30 a.m. I left South Bend and changing trains at Cleveland where I spent about 40 minutes waiting for the train to N.Y.

## March 28

8 a.m. I arrived in N.Y. and was met by Hur Jung<sup>191)</sup> and Kim Young Sup. I stopped at Hotel Commodore.

## March 29

At 8:30 p.m. had a Korean mass meeting at the Korean Church.

## March 30

At 12:30 a.m. left N.Y. and reached Washington, D.C. at 8 a.m.

## August 14

At 8:15 a.m. I left Washington, D.C. and arrived at Philadelphia at 12 o'clock. Dr. Jaisohn came to the Broad St. station and we had lunch at the Station cafe. At 3:15 p.m. I left Philadelphia and returned to Washington at 7 p.m.

## August 22

At 4:50 p.m. I left Washington on Pa. line for Los Angeles.

## August 25

At 7:30 a.m. arrived in Denver. At 1:30 p.m. left Denver by Union Pacific train.

191) Heo Jeong (허정, 1896-1988) was active in the Korean independence movement in the United States and France. During Rhee's presidency, Heo would serve in several cabinet positions, including minister of transportation and acting prime minister, 1951-52. He was mayor of Seoul, 1957-59, and the sixth prime minister of Korea, 1960.

August 27

Reached Sacramento, Cal, at 3 p.m. and left there at 4:10 p.m. and at 10:30 p.m. landed in Fresno. Stopped at Hotel Fresno.

August 28

At 9 a.m. left Fresno on a taxi and reached Dinuba at about 11 a.m. In the afternoon we had a conference with a number of leaders on the bank of a river and at 7:40 p.m. I left Dinuba on the Southern Pacific train.

August 29

At 7:40 a.m. arrived in Los Angeles and stopped at the new Hotel Rosslyn.

August 31

At 6 p.m. I left Los Angeles and arrived in San Francisco at 10:30 a.m. Sept. 1, 1922 and stopped at Hotel Stewart.

September 2

At 1 p.m. I sailed on the Pacific Mail S.S. President Wilson for Honolulu.

September 7

1 p.m. arrived in Honolulu and stayed in a house rented at 1105—3rd Ave. Kaimuki.

## CHAPTER 2

1924

January 23<sup>192)</sup>

Wednesday at 10 a.m. I left Honolulu for San Francisco on the S.S. Maui of Matson Navigation Line.

January 29

At 9 a.m. landed in San Francisco. Met at wharf by Yim Jung ku and stopped at Stewart Hotel.

January 31

At 4 p.m. I left San Francisco with <이창규><sup>193)</sup> on steamer Yale for Los Angeles.

February 1

At 11:10 a.m. we arrived at Wilmington, Cal. and met by friends who came from Los Angeles to meet me. We stopped at Hotel New Rosslyn.

February 7

At 6 p.m. I left Wilmington, Los Angeles, on board the steamship Venezuela of the Pacific Mail Steamship line. Chung Inyung, Lee Soonki, Isaac Kim, Chang kiu Lee and C.P. Hong came to see me off.

192) This entry was misdated as 23 January 1923 in the typescript. There are no extant entries for 1923.

193) Lee Chang-kyu would serve as treasurer of the Dongji-hoe in 1930.

## February 14

S.S. Venezuela anchored off Champerico, Guatemala, and next day I went ashore to visit the place.

## February 15

S.S. Venezuela left Champerico.

## February 16

S.S. Venezuela anchored at San Jose, Salvador; in an excursion of over 50 passengers, we went overland in autos to visit the capital city, San Salvador, about 45 miles from the port. We came back the same afternoon to the boat.

## February 18

Left San Jose and anchored at Corinto, Nicaragua, on the 19th at 7 a.m. We went on an excursion with about 24 passengers on R.R. train to Managua, the capital city of Nicaragua, about 230 miles and reached there at 12:20 p.m. Stopping at Hotel La Polean<sup>194</sup>), we visited the city.

## February 21

At 9:30 a.m. left Managua and reached the ship at 4 p.m. and sailed at once from Corinto.

## February 24

Arrived in Balboa at 6 p.m. Went ashore to visit Panama City, Ancon, and locks.

<sup>194</sup>) Possibly a misspelling of Hotel Lupone, a prominent Managua hotel.

## February 25

At 6 a.m. I left Balboa on S.S. Venezuela and sailing through the Canal arrived at Cristobal, Colon and Gatun Lock at 2:30 p.m.

## February 26

At 9:30 p.m. I left Cristobal for Havana, Cuba.

## March 1

Arrived in Havana at 1:30 p.m.

## March 2

At 4 p.m. I left Havana for Baltimore. The carnival began late in the afternoon but the boat did not wait.

## March 6

At 7:30 I arrived in Baltimore. Customs officers showed me diplomatic courtesy and did not examine my baggage.

I left Baltimore at 12:55 p.m. with Mr. Hildebrand of Washington and arrived in Washington at 1 p.m. Namkoong<sup>195</sup>) made room reservation at Burlington Hotel and I registered there.

## March 8

At 2 p.m. I left Washington and reached Philadelphia at 5 p.m. We went out to Jaisohn's home and stayed overnight. Next day, Sunday, March 9 I left Philadelphia by 2 p.m. train and arrived at New York by 4 p.m. Met by many friends at Penn. station and went to

<sup>195</sup>) Namgung Yeom (David Y. Namkoong, 1888–1961), a graduate of Paichai School, served as a member of the Korean Commission during the early 1920s. He organized a branch of the Dongji-hoe in New York City and served as Rhee's consul general to New York during the 1950s. Namgung is a two syllable Korean surname.

the Korean Church and Institute. Stopped at Penn. Hotel for a meeting Monday evening.

#### March 11

At 9 a.m. left N.Y. and arrived at Avon, N.J. at 11 a.m. After a visit with Mrs. Starks and her sister I left Avon, or rather Asbury Park at 4:50 p.m. and returned to Washington at 11 p.m. Stopping at Hotel Burlington.

#### March 21

Moved from Hotel Burlington to Cairo Hotel, Washington.

#### April 30

At midnight I left Washington and reached New York at 7 a.m.

#### May 1

Left N.Y. at 3:25 and returned to Washington at 8:30 p.m.

#### August 20

Wednesday at 9 a.m. I left Washington to attend Namkoong's wedding and reached N.Y. at 2 p.m. Stopped at Hotel Commodore.

#### August 21

At 4:10 p.m. I left N.Y. and reached Belmar, N.J. at 6 p.m. and stayed at 306 River Ave. McFaden's.

#### August 22

Leaving Belmar at 12:01 p.m. Returned to Washington at 6:20 p.m.

#### October 14

At 9 a.m. I left Washington, D.C.

At 2:45 p.m. I reached N.Y. and stopped at Hotel Commodore.

#### October 15

At 10 a.m. I left N.Y. and reached Philadelphia at 12 o'clock and thence to Media, Pa. to see Dr. Jaisohn.

At 3:50 p.m. I left Media and left Philadelphia at 5 p.m. returning to N.Y. at 5 p.m.

#### October 16

At 8:30 a.m. left N.Y.

#### October 17

At 9 a.m. reached Chicago and stopped at Congress Hotel.

#### October 18

At 8:30 a.m. left Chicago.

#### October 20

At 12:45 changed train at Williams, Arizona, and reached Grand Canyon at 4 p.m. and stopped at Hotel El Tovar.

#### October 21

At 8:30 a.m. I left Grand Canyon.

#### October 22

At 7:30 a.m. I reached Los Angeles. Stopped at Hotel New Rosslyn.

October 25

At 12 o'clock I left Los Angeles on S.S. Calawaii, Chang kiu Lee coming with me.

November 1

At 8 a.m. arrived in Honolulu and came to Palolo house.

## CHAPTER 2

1925

November 20

Left Honolulu at 5 p.m. on S.S. Haleakala and reached Hilo at 7 a.m. Nov. 21. Kim Sung ki accompanied me.

December 11

At 7 a.m. Kim Sung Ki and I came back from Lahaina after a tour to Hawaii and Maui.

## CHAPTER 2

1926

January 5

At 5 p.m. I left Honolulu on S.S. Haleakala and arrived in Hilo at 7 a.m. Jan. 6.

January 7

Kim Kyung Nak and family moved up to Supe place near 18 miles from Hilo, Hawaii. I came with them to our new 1000-acre farm called Dongji chon.<sup>196)</sup>

January 24

At 5 p.m. I left Hilo on S.S. Haleakala and returned to Honolulu at 7 a.m. Jan. 25.

February 2

I left Honolulu and landed in Hilo Feb. 3.

April 1

At 5 p.m. I left Hilo and returned to Honolulu at 7 a.m.

April 19

I left Honolulu on S.S. Haleakala and reached Hilo at 7 a.m. April 21 and came to Lehua R.R. station in Dongji Chon.

<sup>196)</sup> The Dongji-chon (동지촌), or Comrade Village, was a business venture of the Dongji-hoe. Dongji-hoe members cleared a large tract of forested land hoping to make a profit from dairy, produce, and lumber. The venture was not successful and left Rhee and his supporters with significant debts and legal issues. Kim Kyung Nak was named vice-president of the Dongji Investment Company, the legal entity that oversaw the venture.

May 2

At 4 p.m. I left Hilo on S.S. Haleakala and reached Honolulu May 3 at 7 a.m.

June 15

I left Honolulu at 4 p.m. and reached Hilo at 7 a.m. the next day June 16.

August 8

At 4 p.m. I left Hilo and reached Honolulu at 7 a.m. the 9th of August.

September 14

At 4 p.m. I left Honolulu in company with Mrs. C.H. Min and <강수산나><sup>197)</sup> and reached Hilo at 7 a.m. next day.

October 14

At 4 p.m. I left Hilo and arrived in Honolulu the following morning at 7. Oct. 15.

October 19

At 4 p.m. I left Honolulu on S.S. Haleakala and arrived in Hilo at 7 a.m.

December 26

Left Hilo at 4 p.m. and reached Honolulu at 7 a.m.

<sup>197)</sup> Possibly the name "Susanna Kang" rendered in the Korean alphabet.

## CHAPTER 2

1927

March 15

Left Honolulu at 4 p.m. with Mr. and Mrs. Sparks and their daughter of Hollywood, Cal. and reached Hilo at 7 a.m.

March 21

At 4 p.m. I left Hilo and returned to Honolulu at 7 a.m. the following day.

May 17

At 4 p.m. I left Honolulu and arrived in Hilo at 7:30 a.m. May 18, Wednesday.

June 19

Sunday at 4 p.m. I left Hilo with Mr. Won kiu Ahn<sup>198</sup>) and arrived in Honolulu at 7 a.m.

November 1

Tuesday at 2 p.m. I left Honolulu on S.S. Mauna Kea because S.S. Haleakala was under inspection and landed in Hilo at 7 a.m. the next morning.

Mrs. Susanna Hong, <최기룡><sup>199</sup>), his daughter Salome on the same boat going to <Dongji Chon—our farmland.>

198) Ahn (안원규) held positions in the KNA, the Dongji-hoe, and the United Korean Committee in Hawaii.

199) Choe Gi-ryong.

December 4

At 4 p.m. I left Hilo on S.S. Haleakala and arrived in Honolulu at 7 a.m. <Dec 5.>  
Hong Susanna came on the same boat steerage.

December 23

At 4 p.m. I left Honolulu and landed in Hilo at 7 a.m.

## CHAPTER 2

1928

January 5

I left Hilo at 4 p.m. and reached Honolulu at 7 a.m.

May 9

At 8 p.m. I, with <김경준><sup>200)</sup> left Honolulu on steamer Kilauea and arrived at Ahukini pier, Lihue, Kauai at 5:30 a.m. the following day and met by Mrs. <이병두><sup>201)</sup> who came out on her car to meet us.

May 15

At 6 p.m. I left Ahukini pier, Lihue Kauai. Mrs. <이병두><sup>201)</sup> brought us, I and <김경준><sup>200)</sup> to the pier. Alice Park <맹조> treated us at Hanamaulu with Shinkun Lee and Mr. and Mrs. <임일관 & Mr. 이대보><sup>202)</sup> from Kapaa came with leis to see us off.

May 18

At 4 p.m. I left Honolulu on S.S. Haleakala and reached Hilo at 7 a.m. the following day, May 19.

May 27

Left Hilo at 4 p.m. on the Haleakala and returned to Honolulu at 7 a.m. May 28.

200) Kim Kyeong-jun became a leader of the anti-Rhee faction in Hawaii after 1930. He was a founder of the Sino-Korean People's League, which during the 1940s competed with the Korean Commission to represent the Korean people in Washington, D.C.

201) Lee Byeong-du.

202) Im Il-gwan and Lee Dae-bo.

June 5

Left Honolulu at 4 p.m. and came to Hilo at 7 a.m.

June 17

Left Hilo at 4 p.m. and reached Honolulu at 7 a.m. June 18.

August 3

At 4 p.m. I left Honolulu with George Winter and arrived in Hilo the following morning at 7. Mr. Winter came to construct the charcoal oven in Dongji Chon.<sup>203)</sup>

August 26

At 4 p.m. I left Hilo and came to Honolulu at 7:30 a.m. Monday, August 27.

September 4

At 4 p.m. I left Honolulu with Tompkins and reached Hilo at 7 a.m. the following morning. Tompkins came to set up a sawmill for Ohia lumber.<sup>204)</sup>

September 23

I left Hilo at 4 p.m. and took room in S.S. Haleakala with Dr. <이극노><sup>205)</sup> and landed in Honolulu at 7 a.m.

September 28

At 4 p.m. I left Honolulu and reached Hilo at 7 a.m. the next morning.

203) The charcoal oven was intended to turn the excess lumber on the farm into marketable charcoal.

204) The Dongji Investment Company had won a contract with the Department of the Navy to provide keel blocks from ohia lumber.

205) Lee Geuk-ro (1893 - 1978) was a German-educated scholar known for promoting the Korean language during Japan's occupation. Lee's advocacy led to his arrest in the Korean Language Society Incident (조선어학회 사건) in 1942. In 1948, he travelled to Pyongyang with Kim Ku to participate in reunification talks. Lee decided to stay in North Korea, where he served in several government and scholarly positions.

October 25

I left Hilo at 4 p.m. with Mr. Henry Kim<sup>206</sup> and reached Honolulu the next morning.

November 9

At 4 p.m. I left Honolulu and reached Hilo at 7 a.m.

December 9

I left Hilo at 4 p.m. and landed in Honolulu at 7 a.m. the following day.

December 18

At 4 p.m. I left Honolulu for Hilo and reached Hilo at 7 a.m. next day.

206 Kim (김현구, 1889–1967) taught at the Korean Youth Military Academy in Hastings, Nebraska, before graduating from Ohio State University, 1917. He was a member of the Korean Commission, 1926–29. By 1930, Kim had become a major critic of Rhee's leadership. His autobiography is an important, though not always trustworthy, source of information on the Korean independence movement. See Henry Kim, *The Writings of Henry Cu Kim: Autobiography with Commentaries on Syngman Rhee, Pak Yong-Man, and Chŏng Sun-Man*, trans. Dae-Sook Suh (Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 1987).

## CHAPTER 2

1929

January 10

At 4 p.m. I left Hilo and landed in Honolulu the following morning at 7.

January 15

At 4 p.m. I left Honolulu and came to Hilo at 7 a.m. Jan. 16.

March 14

At 4 p.m. I left Hilo and reached Honolulu at 7 a.m. the next morning.

March 22

At 4 p.m. I left Honolulu and came to Hilo at 7 a.m. next morning with Pearl Harbor order for 70,000 bd. ft. of Ohia timber. Tompkins guaranteed that his saw mill could saw ohia timber and we signed the U.S. navy yard contract but failed to deliver the timber.

May 23

Left Hilo at 4 p.m. and reached Honolulu at 7 a.m. the following morning.

May 28

At 4 p.m. I left Honolulu and reached Hilo the following a.m.

July 21

At 4 p.m. I left Hilo and reached Honolulu at 7 a.m.

## August 2

At 4 p.m. I left Honolulu and landed in Lahaina, Maui at 9:30 p.m. the same day. Driving by night in a taxi, we went to Wailuku Hotel and stopped overnight.

## August 3

At 8 a.m. I started in a mail car and reached Hana at 3 p.m. Spending that night, Saturday at Korean Church, we had a meeting with a number of Koreans. After the church service led by <주용한><sup>207)</sup> morning I left Hana at 2 p.m. in the auto which brought 김영조 부인<sup>208)</sup> and 아랄이<sup>209)</sup> came back to Wailuku at 6 p.m. Sunday. At Lahaina, I went aboard S.S. Haleakala at 1 a.m. August 4 and returned to Honolulu at 7 a.m.

## August 7

I left Honolulu at 4 p.m. and landed in Hilo at 7 a.m.

## August 8

I left Hilo at 4 p.m. and reached Honolulu at 7 a.m. the following day.

## August 23

I left Honolulu at 5 p.m. and reached Hilo at 7 a.m.

## September 1

At 4 p.m. I left Hilo and came to Honolulu at 7 a.m.

## September 10

At 4 p.m. I left Honolulu and reached Hilo at 7 a.m.

207) Ju Yong-han.

208) "The spouse of Kim Yeong-jo."

209) Possibly a Korean name that might be romanized as "A Ral-i."

## September 26

At 4 p.m. I left Hilo and returned to Honolulu the next morning.

## October 5

At 10 a.m. I left Honolulu on the S.S. City of Honolulu for Los Angeles.

## October 11

At 7 a.m. the City of Honolulu arrived in San Pedro, or Wilmington, Cal. but owing to the baggage inspection and immigration inspection, the passengers landed in Wilmington at 10:30 a.m. Five autos from Los Angeles brought many friends, men, women, and children to meet me. Among them were: <최영기, 이순기 & 자녀, 정지영, 김종립 & wife, 임영선 여사, 김성권, 서정우, etc.><sup>210)</sup>

We had luncheon at the Y.M.C.A. in Wilmington and drove in new Buick Sedan accompanied by other cars to Los Angeles and registered at Hotel Clark where they had made previous reservation. <김중수><sup>211)</sup> and <전진택><sup>212)</sup> were to escort me during my stay in the city.

## October 15

I moved to Northern Hotel.

## October 24

<김정진, 한석진, 이민식><sup>213)</sup> came from Dinuba and Reedley to bring us to their welcome meetings. We came in their auto with <전진택><sup>212)</sup> and stopped at Hotel Winnes at Reedley. Meeting on the evening of the 25th.

210) Choe Yeong-gi, Lee Sun-gi & children, Jeong Chi-yeong, Kim Jong-lim & wife, Mrs. Im Yeong-seon, Kim Seong-kwon, Seo Jeong-u, etc.

211) Kim Jung-su.

212) Jeon Jin-taek.

213) Kim Jeong-jin, Han Seok-jin, Lee Min-sik.

## October 26

Kim Chung Chin, Lee Min Sik and Rev. Hahn Suk Won came for me from Reedley and Dinuba. At 9 o'clock we left Los Angeles. <진진택><sup>212</sup> and those three men drove over to Ridge Way came to Reedley that afternoon, <진택><sup>212</sup> and I stopped at Winnes Hotel.

## October 27

At 6 p.m. had a reception at Korean M.E. Church S attended by about 60 people representing 3 places. At 7:30 had a reception meeting at Korean Presbyterian Church at Dinuba. <이살음><sup>214</sup> presiding.

## October 28

Twelve people including Mrs. <김형순><sup>215</sup> and Ruth Kim, her daughter, left for Yosemite in 2 autos. Stopping at Yosemite Lodge, we stayed overnight. The following day, Sunday, we started on the way back, stopping at several places of interest including the Wawona tree grove and returned to Reedley where I preached at 8 p.m. in the Reedley Korean M.E. Church S. We spent Monday at Reedley entertained by Kim <형순><sup>215</sup> and family. In the evening <이살음><sup>214</sup> invited us to a dinner at his home and then we returned to Winnes Hotel.

## October 29

We left Reedley on Kim <정진><sup>216</sup> car and stopped at Delano at Kern Hotel. Being entertained at <이순기><sup>217</sup> home where we had a meeting attended by about 40 people.

214) Lee Sal-eum (1892-1966) served with Rhee as a member of the unseated Korean delegation to the San Francisco Conference (1945).

215) Kim Hyeong-sun (1886-1977) was a long serving officer in the KNA, 1914-44.

216) Kim Jeong-jin.

217) Lee Sun-gi.

## October 30

We came back to Los Angeles and stayed at Northern Hotel.

While here we made several trips to the outside towns; Riverside, Upland, Orange, and Pomona.

## November 5

Tuesday at 9:45 p.m. I left Los Angeles on Santa Fe train "Chief" for Chicago. Many friends came to the R.R. station to see me off.

## November 8

At 9:45 a.m. reached Chicago and was met by many friends at the R.R. station and drove to Lexington Hotel. Thursday evening at <정태은><sup>218</sup> shop a Korean dinner was given by <동지회><sup>219</sup> at which more than 40 people were present, including two ladies, <오한수><sup>220</sup> wife and Mrs. <김일선><sup>221</sup>.

## November 10

At 1 p.m. I left Chicago on the B. & O. Limited for Washington, 19 hour train, the fastest R.R. between Chicago and Washington and arrived in Washington at 8 a.m. of the following day, the 11th. <윤치영, 김도연, 이훈구, 김종철, 안승화><sup>222</sup> stopped at Hamilton Hotel.

218) Jeong Tae-eun, a member of the Dongji-hoe, was appointed Rhee's consul to Chicago in 1954.

219) Dongji-hoe.

220) Oh Han-su.

221) Kim Il-seon.

222) Yun Chi-yeong, Kim Do-yeon, Lee Hun-gu, Kim Jeong-cheol, Ahn Seung-hwa, Yun Chi-yeong (1898-1996) would serve as Rhee's secretary after liberation. He was elected to the National Assembly, 1948, and briefly served as South Korea's first minister of the interior. Kim Do-yeon (Kim To Youn, 1894-1967) earned a Ph.D. in economics from American University, 1931. He would become South Korea's first minister of finance, 1948. Lee Hun-gu (Hoon K. Lee, 1896-1961), a University of Wisconsin-trained agricultural economist, would serve as the director of the Farm Affairs Bureau of the AMG. Lee was elected to the National Assembly, 1948, where he helped to draft the Land Reform Law of 1950. A Christian socialist, Lee was active in several socialist parties during Korea's Second Republic, 1960-61. He was arrested by the Park Chung-hee regime and died while incarcerated.

## November 13

Wednesday at 11 a.m. I left Washington, D.C. and reached N.Y. City at 4 p.m. <주영순 and her "friend" 최순주, 김마리아, 윤홍섭, 허정, 강해룡, 남궁엽><sup>223)</sup> and his wife, etc. were at the Pen. R.R. station to meet me. Registered at Pa. Hotel room no. 1480.

## November 24

At 10 a.m. I left N.Y. <남궁엽, 허정, 이기봉, 최용진> and <최순조><sup>224)</sup> came to the Pa. station to see me off. Arriving at Philadelphia at noon, I went to Chester, Pa. where Dr. Park Pum Koo<sup>225)</sup> came to the station with his car to take me to his home. That night I spent at his home. Marcella Syn came that evening from Philadelphia invited by Ada to take dinner with us.

## November 25

I came to Philadelphia from Chester and had a visit with Margaret Crockett and Marcella that day. That night I slept in the apartment at the University of Pa. returning to Chester that afternoon. I went in Pum Koo's car to call on Mrs. Jaisohn at her home in Media, Pa. Dr. Jaisohn at that time was in St. Joseph's hospital in Reading, Pa.

## November 27

At 6:30 p.m. I left Chester, Pa. for Washington, D.C. and was met at the Union Depot at 8:15 p.m. by <윤치영, 안승화> and <이훈구><sup>226)</sup>. Drove to Hamilton Hotel and registered there. Room 532.

223) Ju Yeong-sun and her "friend" Choe Sun-ju, Maria Kim, Yun Hung-seop, Heo Jeong, Kang Hae-ryong, Namgung Yeom, Choe Sun-ju (1902 - 1956), a member of the Dongji-hoe and Rhee's second minister of finance, 1950 - 51. Maria Kim (1891 - 1944) was tortured and imprisoned for her participation in the March First Movement. On medical leave from prison, Kim fled to Shanghai and, afterward, the United States, where she studied sociology and theology and founded several independence associations for Korean women. Kim returned to Korea as a theology teacher in 1933.

224) Namgung Yeom, Heo Jeong, Lee Ki-bung, Choe Yong-jin and Choe Sun-jo. The final name should probably read "Choe Sun-ju."

225) Park (박범구), an American-trained medical doctor who served on the Korean Commission.

226) Yun Chi-yeong, Ahn Seung-hwa, and Lee Hun-gu.

## November 28

Thanksgiving Day I went to Baltimore with <윤치영><sup>227)</sup> and met <송필만><sup>228)</sup>. Mary Anne Kim, of Peabody Conservatory came to Washington with us and enjoyed the Thanksgiving dinner given at the Commission. Nora Ahn also attended the dinner. Then we played <윳놀이><sup>229)</sup>. Late in the evening <김종철><sup>230)</sup> escorted Mary to Baltimore.

## December 4

At 10:30 p.m. I left Washington. All the friends in Washington came to the Union Depot to see me off. The next morning at 8 o'clock Pa. train stopped at Pittsburgh and started at 10 a.m. for Detroit. Arrived at Detroit at 8 p.m. and <was met> by Yangpil Jhung and <안재창><sup>231)</sup>; the former drove to his home where I stayed.

## December 7

At 9 p.m. I left Detroit and reached Chicago at 7:20 a.m. the following day. Friends came to the R.R. station but did not meet and I went to LaSalle Hotel. But later changed to the Hotel Stevens where <김홍기><sup>232)</sup> and others had made the reservation. The Hotel is supposed to be the largest in the world, having 3,000 rooms and 3,000 baths.

## December 14

At 10:30 p.m. I left Chicago on the Santa Fe train. Many friends came to the station to see me off.

227) Yun Chi-yeong.

228) Song Pil-man (1890 - 1978), a member of the Dongji-hoe and future legislator in the Korean National Assembly.

229) Yunnori, a traditional Korean board game.

230) Kim Jong-cheol.

231) Ahn Jae-chang.

232) Kim Hong-ki (Honkey Kim) served in multiple leadership positions among Koreans in Chicago, 1920 - 44, including president of the Chicago Dongji-hoe.

## December 15

Sunday, at 8:15 a.m. arrived at Kansas City and was met by <이중혁> (Howard <Leigh>) who took me to his new restaurant, 3400 Troast Ave. <이완수, 전목사><sup>233)</sup>, Dr. K.S. Kim with his wife and <신태임><sup>234)</sup> came to meet me. Later we went to Dr. Kim's house 4500 Bell St. where I was entertained overnight.

## December 16

Monday at 10:30 a.m. I left Kansas City by Burlington express train for Butte, Mont. due there on the 18th.

## December 18

At 8:05 a.m. I reached Butte, Mont. and took a taxi to Hotel Finlen. Later, hired a taxi and drove to Ramsay. Found <한주선><sup>235)</sup> and friends from 9 miles came to take us out. Had a meeting on the 19th. <장용호><sup>236)</sup> and others came from Pipestone.

## December 19

At 4:45 p.m. I left Butte and reached Salt Lake City at 7:30 a.m. <박희성> and <신성원><sup>237)</sup> met me at the station—<이민식><sup>238)</sup> also. <이민식><sup>238)</sup> the “camp boss” of Bingham Canyon Mines, came with his auto to the White House hotel to take us to the mine. Ground is white with snow. We climbed to the mine in the afternoon, after an hour's drive up the canyon and had a meeting in the camp at 7 p.m. After the meeting <이민식><sup>238)</sup> brought me back to Salt Lake City and stopped at Hotel Wilson.

233) Lee Wan-su, Jeon Mok-sa.

234) Sin Tae-im.

235) Han Ju-seon.

236) Jang Yong-ho.

237) Park Hui-seong and Sin Seong-won.

238) Lee Min-sik.

## December 21

At 1:30 p.m. I left Salt Lake City and drove on <이민식>'s car (Jaison Lee) to Castle Gate, about 120 miles and reached Castle Gate at 6 p.m. The road is covered with snow and ice, and the day very cold in Soldier Summit, where the early Mormon settlers were massacred about 60 years ago. About 20 men and women came to meet me. After the meeting, Annie Wong drove us in her big car up to Helper, where she had made a room reservation in a hotel. <이병목><sup>239)</sup> also stayed in the hotel overnight.

## December 22

At 8:30 a.m. Annie came to drive us to Spring Canyon where two Korean families are living and there we had breakfast. At 11 a.m. Jaison and I left on his car for Salt Lake City and we arrived there at 3:30 p.m. We took supper at a cafe with Mary Wong and I left Salt Lake City at 5:30 p.m. on Union Pacific Continental Limited and arrived in Los Angeles at 5:30 p.m.

## December 23.

Many friends <이창규, 최영기, 김영우><sup>240)</sup> etc. came to the station to meet me and took me to the Northern Hotel.

239) Lee Byeong-mok.

240) Lee Chang-kyu, Choe Young-gi, Kim Yeong-u.

## CHAPTER 2

1930

## January 2

At 12 o'clock I left Los Angeles. At San Pedro on S.S. City of Los Angeles <김순권, 서정우, 최영기, 조종익>, Mrs. <김종림> and Mrs. <허성><sup>241)</sup>, their children and many others were out at the pier to see me off. A group of newspaper reporters interviewed and took picture.<sup>242)</sup>

Newspaper reporters; met Frank B. Howe, Los Angeles Times Bldg. Wayne B. Care, Los Angeles Times and John McGrath, main editor Press Telegram.

## January 8

At 8:15 a.m. landed in Honolulu and was met by a large number of friends at the pier.

## February 4

At 4 p.m. I left Honolulu on S.S. Haleakala and landed in Hilo at 7 a.m. and was met by many friends on the wharf.

## February 13

At 4 p.m. I left Hilo and reached Honolulu at 7 a.m.

241) Kim Sun-kwon, Seo Jeong-u, Choe Yeong-gi, Jo Jong-ik, Mrs. Kim Jong-lim and Mrs. Heo Seong, Kim Sun-kwon (1885-1941), an officer in both the KNA and the Dongji-hoe, made large investments in the Dongji Investment Company, 1929.

242) In a few remarks given at the time of his departure, Rhee described himself as head of the "Dongji movement" headquartered in Hawaii and dedicated to Korean independence. See "Ex-President Is Passenger", *Oakland Tribune*, 3 January 1930.

## February 18

4 p.m. I left Honolulu and landed in Hilo at 7 a.m.

## February 23

At 4 p.m. I left Hilo and reached Honolulu at 7 a.m. the next day.

## April 8

At 4 p.m. I left Honolulu with Robert Palk and <이순오><sup>243)</sup> and landed in Hilo at 7 a.m. April 9.

## April 23

At 4 p.m. I left Hilo with Robert Palk on S.S. Waialeale and reached Honolulu April 23 at 7 a.m.

## June 27

At 4 p.m. I left Honolulu on S.S. Hualaelae for Lahaina, Maui with <김경준><sup>244)</sup> and reached Lahaina at 10 p.m.

June 31<sup>245)</sup>

At 9 p.m. I left Kahului, Maui and returned to Honolulu at 7 a.m. July 1, 1930.

243) Lee Sun-o.

244) Kim Kyeong-jun.

245) The actual date cannot be determined from the text of the entry.

## CHAPTER 2

1931

April 7

At 4 p.m. I left Honolulu for Hilo on S.S. Waialeale.

April 8

At 7 a.m. I landed in Hilo and was met by <김종현, 김성률, 최애다><sup>246</sup>.

November 21

At 11 a.m. I left Honolulu on S.S. City of Los Angeles. Many friends came to the pier to see me off.

November 27

At 11 a.m. I landed in San Pedro or Wilmington, Cal. Many friends were out to meet me. Kim Chung Chin and Mr. and Mrs. Kim Hyung Soon of Reedley, Cal. among them. We drove to Los Angeles and I occupied room 930 and they the 2 rooms, 928-929 Hotel Rosslyn.

November 30

At 10:30 p.m. I left Los Angeles on Santa Fe train "Chief." Many friends were out to bid me farewell.

<sup>246</sup>) Kim Jong-hyun, Kim Seong-ryul, Choe Ae-da.

December 3

At 9 a.m. I reached Chicago and no one met me at the station. I took a taxi to 2312 Indiana Ave. Upon arrival I saw T.U. Jung just going out. I called to him and he was surprised to see me. Los Angeles wireless message he had received stated a wrong date and they were expecting me on Friday instead of Thursday. We drove to the Metropolitan Hotel where I put up in room 402.

December 5

At 11 p.m. I left Chicago on Baltimore and Ohio line and came to Akron, Ohio at 7:30 a.m.

December 6

I took trolley car at 8:20 a.m. and arrived in Cleveland at 9:30 a.m. Left Cleveland by the bus at 1:45 p.m. and reached Oberlin at 3:30 p.m. and was met by Prof. Herbert Miller<sup>247</sup> at the bus station. After a visit with the Millers, they took me to the Oberlin Inn and took me on their auto to Cleveland, B.&O. R.R. station where I took the train at 9:15 p.m. for Washington.

December 7

At 8:53 a.m. I landed in Washington and was met by Mrs. T.Y. Yun and Mr. Yun. We drove to 2109 F St. where the Yuns were living and after breakfast I went to Hotel Hamilton and registered at room 326.

December 15

Moved from Hamilton Hotel to Old Portland Hotel, Room 40a.

<sup>247</sup>) Herbert Adolphus Miller (1875–1951) was an American sociologist known for his anti-imperialism and liberal views on race relations and immigration. Speeches given in Korea and India on the rights of subject peoples while on a tour of Asia (1929–30) resulted in the loss of his professorship at Ohio State University and sparked a nationwide debate over academic freedom. Miller was active in the League of Friends of Korea after the March First Movement and in the Korean-American Council during World War II. After the founding of the ROK, Rhee decorated Miller for his contributions to the Korean independence movement.

## CHAPTER 2

1932

## January 3

At 10 a.m. I left Washington <유억겸(兪億兼)<sup>248</sup>, 윤치영(尹致暎)<sup>249</sup>> came to Union Station to see me off.

At 2:50 p.m. I reached N.Y. Pa. Station and was met by <남궁엽 내외와 준이, 김용중, 이택주><sup>250</sup> etc. and stopped in room 716 a. Pen. Hotel.

## January 9

WOR radio broadcasting newspaper reporters tried to get information concerning the incident of some one disturbed at the hotel room. Police commissioner sent two detectives to escort me to the Bamberger Studio, Commissioner Mullroney. The assistant manager of the Hotel Pa offered the suite 710 and 708a, and I moved to it.

## January 18

Moved from Hotel Pa, to Alexandria Hotel 250 103 St, N.Y.

248) Yu Eok-gyeom (1895 – 1947), a Japanese-trained scholar, was a professor at Yonhi College (formerly Chosen Christian College) during the Japanese occupation. He would be named the Korean director of the Education Bureau of the AMG, 1945.

249) Yun Chi-yeong.

250) Mr. and Mrs. Namgung Yeom and Jun-i [son?], Kim Yeong-jung, Lee Taek-ju. Kim Yong-jung (Yongjeung Kim, 1898 – 1975), educated at Harvard and the University of Southern California, would establish and serve as president of the Korean Affairs Institute (KAI) in Washington, D.C., 1943–75. KAI was founded as a rival organization to Rhee's Korean Commission. During the Cold War, KAI advocated for the reunification of Korea under a nationalist ideology.

## February 26

At 10:15 a.m. I left Alexandria Hotel in N.Y. Namkoong and <최용진><sup>251</sup> assisted me and escorted me to Pen. Station. On the way to Washington, I stopped at Philadelphia and saw Miss Syn. Went to Camden, N.J. and saw Haddon Publishing Co. about Schofield book.<sup>252</sup> Returned to West Philadelphia and took the Pen train at 4:30 p.m. and reached Washington at 7:25 p.m. Stopped at Portland Hotel.

## March 7

The Korean Commission moved to 1010 Peoples Life Insurance Bldg. Washington, D.C.

## March 29

At 3 p.m. I left Washington on Pa train for New York.

At 8 p.m. I came to New York and Namkoong met me at Pa station. I stopped at Hotel Pa. room 7250. Assistant Manager escorted me to the room.

## March 31

At 4 p.m. I left Pa hotel and moved to Kings Crown Hotel on 116 St, near Morningside drive and the room number, 417.

## May 12

At 2:30 p.m. I left King's Crown Hotel and stopped at 44th St. Hotel 120 W. 44th St. N.Y.C. Room no. 211.

251) Choe Yong-jin.

252) The reference is to a manuscript by Frank William Schofield (1889 – 1970), a Canadian missionary and veterinarian. Schofield was perhaps the only non-Korean to be apprised of the March First Movement in advance. He documented it with his camera and in writing. Schofield returned to Canada with a manuscript on the movement, which Rhee had attempted to help him publish before. See Rhee to Guy M. Walker, 9 June 1920; Rhee to Schofield, 4 September 1920; Rhee to Walker, 4 September 1920; and Rhee to Kiusic Kimm, 4 September 1920, in Lew, *Rhee Correspondence in English*, 1:263, 310–12. In 1922, Rhee also invited Schofield to work at the Korean Christian Institute in Hawaii. See Rhee to Schofield, 26 April 1922, in Lew, *Rhee Correspondence in English*, 1:436.

## June 6

At 1:30 p.m. I left N.Y. and coming on bus arrived in Washington at 11:30 p.m. and stopped in room 404, Portland Hotel.

## July 30

Left Washington at 11 a.m. with <강왕조><sup>253</sup> and drove my car over to Philadelphia and found much difficulty in locating Miss Marcella Syn's place. At last after dark we came to 3471 Sansom St. Philadelphia and met her. We, Kang and I, stayed there overnight and next morning July 31, Sunday, we went to Atlantic City, 64 miles from Philadelphia and drove back later in the evening.

## August 1

We, Kang and I, went to N.Y. leaving Philadelphia at 11 a.m. in my car. We reached N.Y. at 4 p.m. Stopped to see the Namkoongs and I alone took room 1002 at 44th St. Hotel, N.Y.

## August 4

Left the 44th St. Hotel and stayed at Namkoongs.

## August 5

I left N.Y. and went to Mr. P.K. Yoon's farm near Allentown, N.J. with June Namkoong and <강왕조><sup>253</sup>. We stayed there overnight and next morning, Aug. 6 we came back to N.Y. stopping to see Slaybacks<sup>254</sup> at Princeton. We stayed at Namkoongs.

## August 7

I left N.Y. and drove to Philadelphia and stayed at 3471 Sansom St. Philadelphia.

<sup>253</sup>) Kang Wang-jo.

<sup>254</sup>) Possibly Princeton dormitory clerk John R.B. Slayback.

## August 8

I went out to Dr. Pum Koo Park at Chester, Pa and Park and I went to Media to see the Jaisohns. I stayed at Park's home at 330 9th St. Chester.

## August 9

At 7:30 a.m. I left Chester and returned to Washington. Stopped at the Franklin Park Hotel on I. St. between 13 and 14 Sts. N.W.

## August 20

Accompanied by Mrs. Schooley of Forest Glen, MD., her son and a Mrs. Stone, her neighbor in my car Dodge, I started driving to Luray, Va. to visit the famous cavern. We started at 7:30 a.m. and reached Luray at 11 a.m., about 94 miles from Washington. We had our lunch near the cavern and at 12 o'clock Schooley boy and I entered the cavern where we visited the wonderful cavern until 2 p.m. At 2:15 we started back home by climbing over the Blue Ridge Mountain, going through many historic places where battles were fought in Civil War. The Lee Highway through Shenandoah Valley, passing Shenandoah caverns is wonderful. We stopped at Strasburg and Winchester, Va. and came home at 9:30 p.m. covering altogether about 50 miles.

## December 9

At 1 p.m. I left Washington and reached N.Y. by Pa. R.R. at 6 p.m. and stopped at Hotel Pa. Room 1476 with Homer B. Hulbert.

## December 11

At 10 a.m. I left N.Y. and reached Philadelphia at 12 o'clock and visited Marcella Syn, who called up Dr. Jaisohn at Media and found out that he was at Charleston General Hospital, Charleston, W. Va. so I left Philadelphia at 4:25 p.m. and returned to Washington at 6:25 p.m.

I called on Dr. Hornbeck<sup>255</sup>, head of the State Dept. Far Eastern Division and asked for a passport. It is difficult for the State Department to issue a passport for a non-citizen but advised me to make a statement asking for a passport which I did. about a day or two later this was returned to me with the signature of the U.S. Attorney-General recommending the State Department to grant the request. At the end of the paper Secretary of State Stimson<sup>256</sup> signed. Thus it became a diplomatic passport. Dr. Hornbeck consulted Mr. Hamilton and Mr. Salisbury<sup>257</sup> in the State Department before they issued this passport, the like of which had never been heard of, as many people said later. This paper was sent to the British, French, Italian, German, and other Legations and Embassies and they visaed it. France, at that time, had a certain difficulty with the U.S. in reference to some French passports ignored by the Immigration authorities in the U.S. So when I went to Europe, the French customs officers visaed it on the train.

These sheets of papers were stamped all over their backs and fronts by consular officers of all the big European powers. At some places inquisitive officers asked why not a regular passport and I told them that I am not a citizen but have lived in America most of my life. In Poland, when I was returning from Moscow, an American on the train saw it and said, "I did not know our State Department was doing things of that sort." However, I was accorded with diplomatic courtesies and privileges nearly everywhere, including the N.Y. harbor when I was returning. There a special officer was assigned to escort me to the customs officers on the pier and pass my baggage without inspection. This paper was stolen in a N.Y. hotel where Japanese boys worked.

255) Stanley K. Hornbeck (1883–1966) was an American educator and diplomat. He was a member of the American delegation to the Paris Peace Conference (1919) where he met Kim Kyu-sik. Hornbeck unsuccessfully raised the Korean question with other members of the American delegation. In 1922, Rhee referred to him as "one of our [Koreans] true friends in Washington." But by 1945 Rhee's relationship with Hornbeck had become antagonistic because of the State Department's decision not to recognize the KPG. See Rhee to George A. Fitch, 8 July 1922; and Francesca Rhee to Rhee, 23 November 1945, in Lew, *Rhee Correspondence in English*, 1:458; 3:455. See also Manela, *The Wilsonian Moment*, 207–9.

256) Henry L. Stimson (1867–1950) was U.S. secretary of state, 1929–33.

257) Maxwell M. Hamilton and Laurence Salisbury were members of the State Department's Office of Far Eastern Affairs.

[Begin Daybook 5 December 1932 – 12 February 1933]

During the Japanese Manchu invasion, Koreans in Hawaii urged me to go to Geneva to present Korea's case before the League of Nations.

Dongji Investment Company project failed and abandoned and I went to Washington quietly.<sup>258</sup>

See the paper about passport.<sup>259</sup>

#### December 20

At 10 a.m. I left Washington by Pa R.R. and stopped in West Philadelphia at 12:45 p.m. At 2 p.m. I left Broad St. station, Philadelphia and reached New York at 4 p.m., stopping at Pa. hotel, room 1423a.

#### December 23

At 5 p.m. I left N.Y. and sailed for Liverpool aboard the steamship Laconia of Cunard Line at 14th St. Pier, steamer cabin no. 89. Many friends came to the pier to see me off.

258) The Dongji Investment Company went bankrupt in April 1931 with over \$20,000 in debt. In December 1931, Rhee submitted a petition for relief from a debt of \$8,016.16 owed to the Department of the Navy. C.F. Adams, secretary of the navy, favored release from the debt. Bills absolving the company of the debt were introduced by Victor S.K. Houston, Hawaii's territorial representative, and Senator Hiram Bingham of Connecticut. The bills passed and became Pvt.L. (Private Law) 72–169.

259) Possibly Rhee's commentary on obtaining a diplomatic passport in the entry for 11 December above.

1933 ~  
~ 1934

## CHAPTER 3

1933

### January 1

After passing through one of the worst storms Southern Ireland has experienced for many years, as the Queenstown Dispatches said, we saw the lighthouse on the coast of Southern Ireland.

At 3 p.m. the ship anchored off the Queenstown port in Southern Ireland and a tender ship came out to take the mail and passengers off. Then we sailed again from there for Liverpool, due there early the following morning.

### January 2

At 7 we slowly pulled into the harbor of Liverpool and at 8:10 a.m. we landed. By a special train leaving Liverpool at 10 a.m., we reached Euston Station, London at about 2 p.m. I stopped at Oddenino Hotel near Piccadilly Hotel, room 67. I went to the Presbyterian Church headquarters, 15 Russell Square and then went to Student Christian Movement, 82 Russell Square and met Mr. H. Lee who took me around in the evening.

### January 4

At 7:10 a.m. I left Air Union Station, London. H. Lee <이활><sup>260</sup> who came to see me off, was with me to the Haymarket Air Drome or Landing Field. At 8:00 a.m. I left by air and arrived at Paris at 10:45 a.m. London was too densely covered with fog to see even the houses on the street, but outside the city it was a little better and one could see some houses and open fields here and there. The thick, heavy sheets of fog were passing over

<sup>260</sup> Lee Hwal.

the channel and the channel and streaks of green fields were seen quite clearly through them. The plane rose and dropped quite a few times and some passengers thought it was rather rough.

At Paris I changed plane and left at 11 a.m. The fog was very much lifted and a good deal of the country could be seen. At 2:15 I landed at Lyon, France but was told that it was uncertain whether or not they would fly at all that day on account of the unfavorable weather condition. But later they received word from Geneva and started on a smaller but nicer plane with only three passengers including myself.

The fog was still quite heavy but for a most part of the flight partly clear and the wonderful panoramic scene of the Alps with patches of snow in contrast with the pine-clad green peaks was spread under the plane. About 40 minutes' flying from Lyon brought Lake Geneva in full view and the plane landed without difficulty. Mr. Seu Ringhai<sup>261</sup> was out at the Aerodrome to meet me. We drove to Hotel Russie where Mr. Seu had made the reservation for me. The Hotel is right by the Lake and the windows of my room opening to the full view of the Lake.

### January 5 (Geneva Contacts)

In Geneva. I moved from suite no. 76 to a smaller room no. 46. I spent a part of the day with Mr. <서영해><sup>261</sup>.

### January 6

Had a long conference with the Chinese delegate, Dr. W.W. Yen<sup>262</sup> at his headquarters; <서영해><sup>261</sup> arranged for the meeting. I told him that we have several plans to pursue in presenting our claim to the League but we want to know which of our plans will be agreeable to the League. Yen said he would take it up with some members of the

<sup>261</sup> Seu (서영해, Seo Yeong-hae, 1902 – 1949) was a participant in the March First Movement and the founder of Agence Korea, a Korean news agency operating in France.

<sup>262</sup> Wieching Williams Yen (1877 – 1950), an American-educated Chinese representative to the League of Nations.

Secretariat and let me know. Dr. <Lee Suk Cho> influential in Chinese and Paris Government was with Dr. Yen to meet me. Both promised to do all they could for us.

### January 7

Plantus J. Lipsey, Jr., correspondent of Associated Press, came to see me at the hotel. We had a long talk and he said he would help all he could. He is a friend of Charles Ed. Russell.<sup>263)</sup>

### January 7<sup>264)</sup>

Plantus J. Lipsey<sup>265)</sup> called at the hotel to see me. Charles Edward Russell of Washington had written him, I told him that we want some one in the League to bring up our case before the League when we present a petition or brief and also to secure an experienced publicity man to handle our publicity end. He said he would think it over and recommend some one for publicity.

### January 8

Sunday. I went to the American Episcopal Church near the hotel. There I met Mr. or Rev. Julian Sturtevant Wadsworth<sup>266)</sup>, former Methodist minister and school chum of Henry Appenzeller. After the service I met Mr. Blake, American Consul-General and his wife. Mr. and Mrs. Wadsworth invited me and Seu to luncheon at his hotel, Carlton Park Hotel, the best residence hotel, and we all went together in a bus. After lunch Madam Clara Guthrie D'arcis, President of the Union of Women for International Concord, Treas-

263) Russell (1860–1941) was an American journalist, socialist, and Pulitzer Prize-winning author. He was also a founder of the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People. Rhee had known Russell since at least 1920. Russell was probably one of the many journalists Rhee met after the March First Movement drew significant media attention to Korea. See Rhee to Russell, 2 August 1920, in Lew, *Rhee Correspondence in English*, 1:289.

264) Both entries for 7 January appear in Daybook 5.

265) Rhee recorded the name as "Plantus I. Lipsey" in Daybook 5. The correct spelling is uncertain.

266) Wadsworth (d. 1939) was a Methodist minister and an international relief worker. After serving as a military chaplain in World War I, Wadsworth managed the Methodist Episcopal Church's relief efforts in Chateau-Thierry, France. From 1931–36 he represented the Methodist Church in Geneva as a "minister for peace."

urer of Women's Disarmament Committee, etc. came to meet with us and we remained with them all until 3 p.m.

### January 9

Dr. W.W. Yen called at the hotel but I was out and he left his card.

Later in the afternoon Lipsey called to see me and recommended a young man and Mr. Alfred E. Blanco, who is in charge of Anti-Opium Movement. In the evening we went to his office and made acquaintance with him. We had a long talk with Madam D'arcis.

Drew Pearson<sup>267)</sup> of Washington sent me a number of letters of introduction to Prentiss Gilbert<sup>268)</sup>, U.S. Consul and League observer, P.I. Streit<sup>269)</sup>, N.Y. Times Correspondent, and Albin E. Johnson, former N.Y. World Correspondent.

I saw Streit and had a long talk with him. He said he would do all he could to help me.

Wm. Philips Simms<sup>270)</sup> of Washington wrote to Harry Wood, former correspondent of United Press. I had a long talk with him at his hotel and asked him to take up our publicity work for a month or so. He said he could not do it because of his connection with United Press. He advised me to see Blanco and that I might get in touch with Whyte Williams, formerly of N.Y. Times, Philadelphia Ledger, Hearst paper, etc. but now no job and is in Paris.

### January 11

I saw Dr. Yen and at first he did not know what he could do to help our cause. Then I told him that it was so closely connected with Manchurian question that to present the Korean question to the League will mean to beat the Japanese from another angle. He

267) Andrew Russell Pearson (1897–1969) was an American journalist and commentator whose column "The Washington Merry-Go-Round" became one of the most read in the U.S. from the 1940s through the 1960s.

268) Prentiss Bailey Gilbert (1883–1939) was the only American representative to sit on the League of Nations Council, which he did briefly in October 1931.

269) Clarence Kirschmann Streit (1896–1986) was a *New York Times* correspondent and author of *Union Now*, a 1939 book that called for greater unity among democratic nations.

270) Simms (c. 1882–1959) was an American journalist who served as a foreign editor for Scripps-Howard newspapers.

at once agreed and promised to present any brief that we may like to present. Then he asked me to see Quo Tai Chi, the Chinese Minister to London and Wellington Koo, both being in Geneva now.

### January 12

Met Quo Tai Chi (郭泰祺)<sup>271</sup> in the morning at his apartment. At first he expressed “warm appreciation of your good work and that of your compatriots for Korea and China.” He said Drs. Yen, Koo<sup>272</sup> and he had agreed to present to the League any paper we may prepare for presentation. Incidentally, I spoke to him about Schofield’s mss. and how we tried to get it published and also that I had negotiated with a certain printing company who agreed to publish about 1,000 copies for about \$500.<sup>273</sup> He said he would take the matter up with his colleagues and see to it that the book be published. Then he suggested that I speak to Koo about it.

In the afternoon Albin E. Johnson came to see me at the hotel. Knowing that he is in connection with the Japanese papers I did not speak to him much of our plans. He said that Prentiss Gilbert wished him to tell me that if I kindly call in his office sometime he will be very glad to see me anytime. He further promised to do all he could to get me in touch with the members of small nations.

Late in the afternoon I went to meet Dr. Rachmann<sup>274</sup> in charge of the Health Department of the League. He and his wife were “at home” and served tea and refreshments. Yen had suggested that I should see him. He at first said it was not a good opportune time to bring up the Korean question and I told him that we think it is the most propitious

271) Quo (1889–1952), an American-educated Chinese ambassador to Great Britain, 1932–40. He would serve as the Foreign Minister of the Republic of China, 1941–42.

272) Wellington Koo (1888–1985), an American-educated Chinese politician and diplomat. He was at the League of Nations protesting the Japanese invasion of Manchuria. He served as the Republic of China’s ambassador to the United States, 1946–56.

273) See the note for 26 February 1932 for Rhee’s previous attempts to publish Schofield’s manuscript.

274) Ludwik Rajchman (1881–1965) was a Polish physician and director of the League of Nations Health Section, 1921–39. He frequently acted as an intermediary between the League and Chinese officials on development projects and served as a medical adviser to Chiang Kai-shek.

moment to present our question side by side with the Manchurian problem showing that Korea was the first step and Manchuria is only the second step etc. and it will help the League and China more than anything else would. Then I told him further that we do not expect the League to get our Independence for us but to bring it up to make it a live issue. Then he began to talk differently and would get some members to help us.

Saw Blanco again. He tried to get us a man and told me that we should not use the men so far recommended. Then in course of our conversation he offered to use part of his time in our cause.

At 6:30 p.m. we stopped at Dr. Koo’s residence. He said he was glad to see me again since we met so long ago in America. He also said the Chinese delegation would present any paper we may desire to present to the League and asked me to make two points clear in our statements. (1) Japan’s treaty violation and betrayal of Korea (2) Japanese atrocities in Korea. Then he asked me about the letters he received recently from the Koreans in Hawaii signed by several Korean organizations in Hawaii including Women’s Society. He said he received one for the league which they asked him to present to the League. He asked me of my opinion thinking that I must have seen it. I felt quite embarrassed, not knowing how to answer it. I did not wish to say it was sent by our opposite faction; nor did I want them to feel that I sent such a childish communication. So I naturally hesitated and he asked me what I think he should do with it. I told him that since I am here to represent all our people, he should not present it to the League. He said he thought that would be the best thing to do and that he could not reply the letter. Then I told him about Schofield’s book and he said he would be glad to help it.

### January 13

I called at the Un. S. Consulate and Gilbert was quite cordial. He asked me about my position as President and said Pearson’s letter mentioned you as “Provincial President” which was a mistake and should be Provisional instead of Provincial. Then he asked me what passport I was travelling on. I said my own passport, that is I wrote my own.

We all smiled and he said they visaed it and I said yes. He asked me what I was hoping to accomplish. We are here to help the League, the Chinese and the cause of world peace. Korea is a part and parcel of the Sino-Japanese question and it is a proper time for us to make it a live issue. In 1910 the Powers did not know Japan's true policy of world conquest, only believing that Japan would be satisfied if they sacrifice Korea and save the open-door policy in Manchuria. We knew that the time would come when the world would be disillusioned. Now the world knows clearly that Korea was a first step and Manchuria is a second step and by no means it is the end and last. Now is the time we should tell the world that to save the peace of the Far East and to save the League of Nations the Powers should get together to put Japan back to the Islands where she really belongs. Then I told him that I want some members to support our demand. He said they, the small nations, are all anti-Japanese and they are naturally "your allies." He mentioned the long list of names and he would get me in touch with them when they return.

### January 13

C. Kuangson Young, in charge of Chinese Press Bureau, came, as directed by Yen and Koo. He had called previously but I was out. He said that Albin E. Johnson, though connected with a Japanese news agency, Rango, he would be best one to conduct our publicity. He stayed for lunch with us, including Seu. He said his service as for news dispatch to China and Korea is concerned will be at our disposal.

In the evening Blanco called up and asked me to come to his house in the evening, bringing my secretary if I like. So we went over after dinner and he and his wife were very courteous and entertaining. In due course of conversation I asked him to take up our course and champion our cause. We cannot pay for his service but will pay to the extent of \$250 a month for an assistant he may employ to help his work while he devote his time to our work. He and his wife said they did not need money and we need not bother with it now. And we agreed to let him do the work for us without employing a publicity agency. At 11:30 p.m. we, Seu and I, left them and came home.

### January 15

Called <in> return to Malcolm Davis, Carnegie Foundation, his courtesy call and talked a while longer than expected. He had attended the Institute of Pacific Relations.<sup>275)</sup>

In the afternoon Lipsey came to see me. He was pleased with the program we have made and advised me to take some pictures of myself, saying that pictures help create news value. He wants to send one to his New York firm and others will want them in different poses, 5 or 6 poses.

Later in the afternoon <과공진(戈公振)><sup>276)</sup> who is in charge of Chinese News Agency and who knows <조소양><sup>277)</sup> came to see me. So in the interview I told him that Chinese should unite together and the Koreans working with them, they will be able to resist the Japanese successfully. He said he will introduce me to the Chinese nation and for that reason he wants one large picture and six others of all different sittings and also make a brief sketch of my life.

### January 16

Sunday I went to the photo studio with Seu. Being Sunday they built no fire in the studio while the weather was unusually cold. We stayed there to make six different poses as requested by the press men, both American and Chinese, for over 3/4 of an hour. When through, I felt too cold and chilly to go to the church so Seu went alone. He came after church and told me that he had been introduced in the church to an American, Merle Davis.<sup>278)</sup> I called him up and asked him if he would not care to meet some one from

275) The Institute of Pacific Relations (IPR) was founded in Hawaii in 1925 to improve cooperation among the nations of the Pacific Rim. The IPR hosted biennial international conferences attended by representatives of its member states. It also published the journal *Pacific Affairs*. In the early 1950s, the IPR came under suspicion in the U.S. for alleged communist sympathies and was the target of several investigations. It disbanded in 1960.

276) Kwa Kong-jin.

277) Jo So-ang.

278) John Merle Davis (1875–1960), a YMCA missionary and executive for the International Missionary Council in Geneva. Davis had been a founding member of the Institute of Pacific Relations.

Honolulu. He said and asked, "Who are you?" I gave my name and he was delighted and would call on me the next day at 4:30 p.m. and take me to his house for tea.

In the afternoon Blanco came to call on me. When we got together in a quiet room, we went over the rough draft of the petition which we want to present to the League.

#### January 17

We drew up the outline of our paper to be presented at the League. Dr. Yen advised me to meet <구태치><sup>279)</sup> Chinese Minister to London. I asked him if he could have his legal adviser look over our paper and get it ready for presentation, he said he would. He advised me to see Koo as he was going to take up our question among themselves, Yen, Koo, and himself.

#### January 18

I saw Koo and he began to show that now is not time to bring up Korean question. I argued and then he said he and his colleagues had decided not to present our question before the League because there is no ground for doing so. I argued and the time was getting late in the evening so I came out.

#### January 19

Mr. Collins, Chinese councillor or Quo's tutor, called up and said Mr. Quo, Chinese Minister wanted him to see me and if I can see him, he will come. So I took the paper which I drew up in which we demanded the League to recognize Korean Provisional Government, and to admit it to full membership in the League. He said here is certain clause in the League Covenant by which a nation, member, could bring up such a question like ours up to the League. So we may leave out the demand for recognition but take up the Manchurian question concerning the Koreans there so as to make our claim

<sup>279)</sup> Quo Tai-chi (郭泰祺).

justifiable at first and no danger of being thrown out. Dr. Quo invited me to lunch with him at his house at 1 p.m. Saturday and I said I would accept it.

#### January 20

At noon, or rather at 1 p.m. I went to Quo Tai Chi's residence with Seu at a Chinese dinner served by a Chinese maid and servant at their home; Mrs. Quo, Mr. Quo, their boy and a young girl, Mr. Collins, Chung, a young man going to China for six months, Dekien Toung<sup>280)</sup>, Chinese Charge D'affaires De China at Vienna, <董德, 乾用九, 鄭彦樂><sup>281)</sup>. After dinner we all came to the parlor. When others went, we talked the matter over, Quo, Toung, Collins, and myself. Quo suggested that instead of demanding recognition etc. we must take up the Korean question of immigrants etc. in Manchuria. I told them that was satisfactory because that will open the way so that we may bring up the question of independence and so forth later. So we agreed and came home late in the afternoon.

#### January 20

In the morning I called up Lester<sup>282)</sup>, the Irish delegate, and he said he would be glad to see me at 11:15 a.m. So I went over to the Irish headquarters. He said he could not do all that he would like to do, but he would do anything that is in line with his official position. He said that any appeal we may make will be turned down and the Secretariat will not circulate it. I told him that provision has been made that a certain member nation will bring it up and demand its circulation. Then, he said, it will be fine. You must get all the news dispatch prepared so that whenever the matter comes up it can be sent out right away. He was careful enough to state that he could not accept me as President of Korean Republic but he could do anything personally if he finds the opportunity to do

<sup>280)</sup> "Toung" in Daybook 5, but "Taung" in Daybook 7. The correct spelling is unknown.

<sup>281)</sup> Dong De, Qian Yongjiu, Zheng Yanyao.

<sup>282)</sup> Seán Lester (1888–1959) was an Irish diplomat who served as the last secretary general of the League of Nations, 1940–46.

so. Then he recommended several delegates I might see and also asked me to loan him some good books or literature concerning Korea. So I told him that I would loan him some literature.

#### January 21

Mr. Quo Tai Chi sent Mr. Collins, formerly a professor in Pa. University and now serving as counselor of the Chinese Delegation, to see what he could do to help us, with the request that we turn over to him the rough draft of our petition to the League. So I turned over to him our first draft and the memorials of 1919 and of 1921.<sup>283)</sup> He took them away and would let me know when ready.

#### January 22

Sunday, Seu and I went to the American Episcopalean Church near the hotel. After service, Merle Davis came and apologized that he had failed to find me on the previous day. He had gone to a wrong hotel and asked me to come this afternoon as he would come to take us to his home where a couple of missionaries from Korea would like to meet us. At 4 p.m. Mr. Davis came to the hotel in his auto and we went to his house. There we met Mrs. Davis, their children, also Mr. and Mrs. B.P. Barnhart<sup>284)</sup> and their children. Barnhart is associated General Secretary of Seoul Y.M.C.A. We had a delightful time and tea and refreshments were served.

#### January 23

Mr. Collins came with the draft of memorial and left it with me to look over saying that Mr. Quo has read and oked it. After I approve it, Drs. Yen and Koo must pass on it.

283) Probably the memorials written with the assistance of Fred Dolph. See the note for 22 November 1921.

284) Byron Pat Barnhart (c. 1889–1942) served as a YMCA missionary in Korea for 24 years before transferring to Thailand in 1940. He spent 170 days in Japanese custody, reportedly under harsh conditions, after the Japanese overran Thailand. Barnhart was repatriated in poor health on board the MS *Grijpsholm*.

The whole idea of it is that the Chinese delegation cannot present our petition demanding the recognition of our government at present and therefore we should memorialize the League to take up our question in conjunction with the Manchurian problem on the ground that Lytton Report<sup>285)</sup> made it clear that the Korean question is a part of the Manchurian conflict, and request the League to see to it that Koreans in Manchuria be kept out of the Japanese claim and treated as naturalized Chinese subjects. This petition will enable the Chinese delegation to present it to the League in connection with the main issue. There is a clause in the League Covenant which permits China to bring up such a question as ours and the League cannot turn it down. When it becomes a part of the Sino-Japanese issue, it will receive the world attention and at once become a new issue. When the question occupies the attention of the League, we can find some members to present our full memorial demanding the recognition of the Republic of Korea. If, on the other hand, we send our petition directly to the League asking them to recognize our independence they will turn it down and that will be the end of it.

Prentiss Gilbert said the Manchukuo envoys came and presented their petition directly and the Secretariat refused to have anything to do with it.

It was never circulated. If they had the Japanese or some other member nation to present it in their behalf, the Secretariat could not turn it down and what is more the delegate who presents it has right to make the Secretariat circulate it.

So it is decided to make our petition a part of the Manchurian issue on the ground <that> more than a million of our people are living there—this as only an opening wedge. Sunday evening and Monday morning I worked on the draft and got it in shape. Mr. Collins called in the morning and suggested that I call up Dr. Yen and ask him to read it and send it to Dr. Koo as soon as possible so that we can present it to the League without delay. Yen answered the phone and asked me to send it over so I did.

285) The published findings of the Lytton Commission, which was sent by the League of Nations to investigate the events resulting in Japan's invasion of Manchuria.

## January 26

At 10 a.m. Collins came and told me that Dr. Yen had called him yesterday afternoon and said that the petition should be presented to the League by the Chinese delegation and not as a petition by the Koreans but as the Chinese are making it themselves and that for that reason the statement should be confined to the questions of the Koreans in Manchuria only, leaving out all the historical accounts of Korean treaties, Japanese annexation, etc. He further stated that he would talk it over with Quo and prepare the paper which the Chinese will present as their own statement. There is no need of hurry and any time within the next ten days or so will be all right, as they are going to bring it up not in the assembly but in the council etc.

I told him that we cannot count on the Chinese any longer. "At first, I told Dr. Yen that we have three or four plans to pursue, that is, either demanding the League to recognize our Government, requesting it to admit our membership in the League or stating our grievances in Manchuria or anything else they, the Chinese, may suggest. We would do anything he, Yen, may choose to present to the League. Dr. Yen said, 'All right, we will present any of these things you may wish us to do.' I saw Dr. Quo and he also expressed the same feeling. Then, you remember, we all met at Dr. Quo's place and asked me if I would agree to the suggestion that our petition leave out the request for recognition and membership admission but simply state the Korean question in Manchuria so that the Chinese will be able to present the petition on the ground that it is not a separate question. So I said I would agree to that since it was one of those I originally had suggested to Yen. After the Chinese has brought up the question in the League in our behalf, we can present other memorial ourselves later. Then with this understanding Dr. Quo asked you to draw up the paper making it about 20 or 25 pages. So you see we have been led step by step to this juncture and <now> they say a different thing altogether. And we again accept their suggestion and wait a week or ten days until the end, what shall we do if they suggest something different again. Under this circumstance it seems best for us to let the Chinese do whatever they think best for themselves while we try to do whatever

we can, etc."

Collins advised that we should follow their advice because they are only too anxious to do it and that they are "not deliberately procrastinating." He further said he would talk over with Quo and let me know.

Mr. Collins came in the afternoon and said he had a talk with Quo and Quo thought Yen's suggestion was good. I asked what was Yen's suggestion. "Why", he said, "Dr. Yen's idea of bringing up Korean question by the Chinese delegation is to make 60% Chinese or Manchurian and 40% Korean. The Japanese will make a rejoinder. Then we will make 60% Korean and 40% Chinese. The Japanese will surely make another rejoinder and then we will make 80% Korean and 20% Chinese, etc. That was Yen's idea", he said. I told him that it would be all right and we will leave it with the Chinese so that whenever they see fit to do it they may do so. But we will bring up our own question ourselves. He said it would be a matter of a few days any way and whatever question you may raise should be after Chinese has done it for you first because it will have that much more effect. After arguing a little, I finally accepted his advice saying that if they are going to do it within a few days we can wait but otherwise we cannot wait indefinitely without knowing how long we will have to wait before they do anything at all. Then Collins said he would finish the paper tonight and see Yen in the morning and see me after that. I asked him if he would help me in our activities and he said he would be glad if Quo agrees to it, as he is working for him. So I told him to find that out from Quo.

## January 27

Johnson of Washington Star and some Japanese papers agent called on the phone and asked me to meet the Finnish Minister and Estonian Minister as he will make appointment for me.

### January 28

Collins called and said Yen will have the paper in the afternoon and told me that it would be worth our while to have a talk with Quo and I told him that I would see Quo in the afternoon. At 1:30 p.m. I went with Seu to the Finnish Minister's residence. Mr. Holsti Rudolph<sup>286</sup>, Finnish Minister was very cordial.

Johnson was there with Mr. and Mrs. A. Schmidt<sup>287</sup>, Minister of Estonia. The Finnish headquarters, 14th Ave. Charles Bonnet, Geneva. I asked Mr. Rudolph if he knew Madam Malmberg<sup>288</sup> who spoke at our meeting in Honolulu in 1918 when she was on her way to N.Y. to attend the conference of small and subject races<sup>289</sup>. He said she lost her sight and I got her address from him. He and Schmidt both were greatly interested and asked many questions about Korea. They both said we were all allies and should do all we can to help on another. He said he would make appointment for me to see Benes<sup>290</sup>, the Minister from Czechoslovakia Monday morning.

After that I went directly to Quo's place and met there Whitaker<sup>291</sup>, a young correspondent of N.Y. Herald Tribune. He was glad to meet me and would like to call on me. After the tea, I had a talk with him. Quo said the Chinese delegation would bring up Korean citizenship question in Manchuria within a few days and that he would think over whether he can let us use Collins or not. Of course, he said, he would get us some one without money but whether he would let Collins stay here or have some one come from

286) Holsti was his surname.

287) August Torma (born August Schmidt, 1895–1971) was an Estonian military officer and diplomat who served in Geneva and, later, in London. Torma was a veteran of the Estonian War for Independence (1918–20). After the Republic of Estonia was absorbed into the Soviet Union in 1940, he agitated for the reestablishment of Estonian independence by continuing to serve as the Estonian Ambassador in London until his death.

288) Aino Malmberg (1865–1933) was a Finnish nationalist and writer. Her visit to Honolulu in 1917 resulted in Korean delegates' participation in the League of Small and Subject Nationalities. See Rhee to Marion Smith, 17 July 1917, in Lew, *Rhee Correspondence in English*, 1:14.

289) A reference to the League of Small and Subject Nationalities. See the note on Marion Smith for 1 February 1919.

290) Edvard Beneš (1884–1948) was a Czech diplomat, independence activist, and president of Czechoslovakia, 1935–38, 1945–48.

291) John Thompson Whitaker (1906–1946) was an American journalist who had a distinguished career as a war correspondent.

London and take Collins back. He said he would let me know and said we are under a moral obligation to help you and beside, I want to see you go back to your country as its head. I told him that I had no personal aspiration.

### January 29

Sunday, I and Seu went to the St. Peter's Church or Cathedral in Geneva and after lunch we went to Lausanne. Left Geneva at 12:50 p.m. by train and landed in Lausanne at 1:45 p.m. We walked around the city on "three hills" founded by the Romans, they say. We went to 24th Ave. Servan to see Miss Anne W. Meriam who is from Forest Glen, Md. and studying at Lausanne University. We took a long walk on the Lake side boulevard and the Park in Ouchy, adjacent to Lausanne. We returned to Geneva by evening train.

### January 30

We have been busy preparing for the petition which we propose to present to the League, after the Chinese bring up before the League the question of Koreans in Manchuria. I said to Collins that the Chinese must have some reason of their own to hesitate in making the presentation of the Korean question and we cannot waste any more time in waiting for them to do it first. In reply, Collins said that we must wait until after the Chinese have done it and further stated that it was the general consensus of opinion among the friendly pressmen.

Meanwhile Quo went to London, hoping to return in a week and left Collins to help us for a week.

### February 1

Collins came and advised me to see Yen at once and ask him to bring up our question at once. Then he brought a copy of the circular sent out to the delegates of all nations stating that some 586 documents representing the people of Manchuria supporting Manchukuo. Among these there are two Korean names in Kirin stating that Manchukuo is

created by the people etc. I wrote a protest against it in the name of Agence Korea and let Seu take it to the Chinese information bureau and let them mimeograph it.

#### February 2

I called up Dr. Yen and asked him how soon he would bring up the question. He said within a day or two and said further that we must wait until they take the lead first.

In the afternoon I went over to see Blanco. In course of conversation he showed his letter to the League in behalf of Anti-Opium League and said, "I had been working for it the last three years and now on the 27th of January somebody, a member of the League, requested the Secretariat to circulate my letter and he did it. Now I got it on an official status. If you want to get anything done, do it yourself. I met Lester and he seemed to be very interested in it. Why don't you write him and ask him to request the Secretariat of the League to circulate it? If Lester does it, then the Secretariat will circulate it and then it will have its official standing." So I asked him to draw up the letter for the League. He said he would and then call me up.

#### February 4

At 10 a.m. I went to Merl[e] Davis' house and told him that I want to know which would be the best way to get in touch with Lord Lytton<sup>292</sup>. He at once called up Pickard<sup>293</sup>, Friends' Society, 5 Tacomerai Ave. and after a long talk he advised me to see him at once. So I went to his office near the St. Peter's Cathedral, the centre of an old city. Mr. Pickard showed me the old wall under his office which was built by the Romans. He said there was adjacent to his place or so, the church where John Knox and John Calvin preached. He said since he received Merle Davis phone call, he talked on the

292) Victor Bulwer-Lytton, 2nd Earl of Lytton (1876–1947) was a British politician and colonial administrator. He chaired the Lytton Commission that investigated Japan's invasion of Manchuria.

293) Bertram Pickard (b. 1892) was a British Quaker who oversaw the Quaker International Centre in Geneva. He also served as the secretary of the Federation of Semi-Official and Private International Institutions, a network of non-governmental organizations active in Geneva after the establishment of the League of Nations.

phone with some persons as to the possibility of opening the way for me to see Lytton and they all expressed doubts as to Lytton's willingness to see me because what they are trying to do is to settle the Sino-Japanese conflict in some way and that alone is already difficult enough. They cannot take up this Korean question which is a step further and is retrospective and no member would take up that question now. I told him at once that our idea is not to throw a monkey wrench into the peace machinery by bringing up our question of independence, but the Lytton Report clearly show the seriousness of the situation about the Koreans in Manchuria. While Japan tried to create impression in every possible way to counteract the impression created by the Lytton report. For that purpose Japan presented the so-called 586 documents from Manchuria in support of Manchukuo. Among the signers of these documents there are two Korean names as previously mentioned, and I feel it proper for us to produce evidences showing that the Koreans there are opposed to the Manchukuo state, etc. Then he said if you have such evidence, Lord Lytton might wish to see you. Then he asked me to wait while he goes to the other room to do the phoning so that he will try to make an appointment for me. Then he withdrew. After a while he came back and said he had made an appointment for me to meet Lord Cecil<sup>294</sup> at Hotel de Richmond next Monday 11 a.m. If you produce sufficient evidence of the Koreans in Manchuria standing against Manchukuo, Cecil would make arrangements for me to see Lytton. Pickard said further that he would try to make an appointment with Christian Lange<sup>295</sup>, Bureau Interparliament 6 rue Constantin, near Burd des Franchis.

Bertram Pickard called up in the afternoon and said that Dr. Christian Lange, Swedish<sup>296</sup> delegation and one of the 19 member Committee appointed by the League to consider the Lytton Report. So I called him up and made an appointment to see him at

294) Lord Robert Cecil (1864–1958) was the British representative to the League of Nations, 1923–27, and the president of the League of Nations Union, a British organization dedicated to furthering the mission of the League of Nations, 1923–45. Cecil won the Nobel Peace Prize in 1937 for his work with the League.

295) Christian Lous Lange (1869–1938) was a Norwegian scholar and Nobel Prize winner for his promotion of internationalism. Lange was a member of the Norwegian delegation to the League of Nations and secretary general of the Inter-Parliamentary Union.

296) Rhee was mistaken about Lange's nationality. Lange, a Norwegian, was a member of the Norwegian delegation.

his house, 2 Ave. de Tour in Chaurpel at 5 p.m. So Seu and I went out to his house but I asked Seu to stay outside. He is a man of over middle age and speaks good English. I spoke to him in a general way and he said no member at this present delicate juncture of the Sino-Japanese problem would bring up the Korean question. However, the time will come in the future when this question of Korean independence will come up. I told him that at present, at least, I will not ask you or any other member of the League to raise the question as to Korean independence. But I want to help the League and China by furnishing some important information concerning the question that is before you. The question before you is whether the League should uphold Lytton Report or accede to the demands of Japan.

While Japan is doing everything to create impression not only in the League but in the whole world that Lytton Report was wrong because they have 586 documents to prove that Manchukuo was created by the people not by Japan and in the list of the so-called signers of the document included some Korean names. I have some evidence in my possession which will counteract the Japanese documents. I am going to present it to the League but in order to give it a semi-official status so that it will have news value and for that reason I want some other member than the Chinese to request the Secretariat to circulate it. That is all I ask at present. Then I see your point now, he said. He said also I will make arrangement for you to see the Swedish delegate, Prime Minister of Sweden, he may be willing to do so. I thanked him and came back.

#### February 5

Sunday. Mr. and Mrs. A.E. Blanco called at the hotel. In the afternoon I and Seu took a long walk toward Selada where the cable train and cable cars take visitors up to the top of the mountain on the French side of the Lake Geneva, about one thousand feet high. Being a fine day, many people were out.

#### February 6

At 10 I met Johnson and asked him to get me a typist. He said he would bring one to the hotel at 6 p.m.

Seu went to Paris on Sunday evening promising to return to-morrow Feb. 7.

At 11 a.m. I went to Hotel Richmond and met Lord Cecil. He asked several questions as to whether Koreans and Chinese are friends and what documentary evidences I have to show that Koreans in Manchuria are against Manchukuo etc.

He thought these evidences are important and asked me to see if any of the small nations would request the Secretary General to circulate our communication. He advised me to see Mr. Madariaga<sup>297</sup>), the Spanish delegate and gave me a letter of introduction.

#### February 7

Tried to get in touch with Madariaga, Spanish delegate but he was Chairman of a very important committee in Disarmament Conference and did not come to his hotel all day. I got the Korean statement ready and got 150 copies of letter to the Secretary-General of the League and 150 copies of the extracts from Lytton Report mimeographed by two different concerns, all were dated Feb. 7. But when I saw Gilbert, American Consul, he advised me to consult Madariaga before sending our letter to the League because he and Lester may present it for you. So I decided to wait another day. Mr. Seu brought a copy of a circular letter sent out by the League Secretary at the request of Dr. Yen. It was about a telegram received by Yen from "Korean Nationalist Party Dongji hoi<sup>298</sup>) in Honolulu" protesting the 586 so-called documents presented by the Japanese the other day alleging to represent Manchurians and two Koreans in Kirin supporting Manchukuo. The Koreans in Honolulu sent this telegram to Yen at my suggestion and it was circulated and conse-

297) Salvador de Madariaga y Rojo (1886–1978), a Spanish diplomat, scholar, and philosopher, led a coalition of small states in the World Disarmament Conference at the League of Nations, 1930–34. He briefly served as chief of the Disarmament Section of the League. Madariaga was given the nickname "Don Quixote of Manchuria" for his strong opposition to Japan's invasion of Manchuria.

298) An alternate way of romanizing "Dongji-hoe."

quently published by some newspapers.

### February 8

Called up Mr. Lester, Irish delegate and he told me to come. I took to him a copy of our letter ready for mail and he said it is very fine.<sup>299)</sup> He asked for the copy and I gave it to him. He cannot do anything without an instruction from his Government but he will ask instruction and if he can he will be glad to request the Secretary to circulate it. So in the afternoon we mailed the letter to the League by registered mail and mailed about 60 copies to all League members and the rest to press correspondents. Seu took some to his friends and wanted more so we ordered 50 copies more twice. Mr. Collins went to Paris with Quo on Feb. 6 and went to London as I learned later.

Seu told me that Geneva newspapers, all in French, announced a radio broadcasting on Friday next which would explain our protest both in French and English. He also said that when he was wiring in the League of Nations a short message to Seoul Dongah Daily, the chief of Japanese Press Bureau came and told him that it was not necessary for him to spend much money because the Japanese had already wired our letter quite fully to Seoul. So he said we could be sure our work has been reported to Korea at Japan's expense.

### February 9

I met Mr. Blanco. He said he wanted to congratulate me on the fine presentation of our case. It was so well drawn up and especially the first part was done in such an experienced statesmanlike way that it put the secretary in a position to feel that he as secretary must circulate it. He said Gilbert had commented on it highly and said he thought he (Blanco) must have helped drafting it. So he told Gilbert that he felt flattered to be con-

299) A copy of this letter is printed in *海外의 韓國獨立運動史料* [Documents of the Korean Independence Movement Abroad] vol. 1 (Ministry of Patriots and Veterans Affairs, 1991), 200–202.

sidered of having drawn up such an able statement. Then he said we overlooked one thing. We must send the letter or rather copies to non-member states, U.S. and Russia. So I told him that I did and thanked him for the suggestion.

Seu reported that the Chinese Press Bureau wired 700 characters to China reporting on our letter to the League.

### February 10

We mailed copies of our letter to Prentiss Gilbert asking him to transmit it to Secretary Stimson and a copy to Litvinoff<sup>300)</sup> Soviet agent.<sup>301)</sup>

Honolulu wireless received saying my message was received through N.Y. and that \$500 has been wired.

### February 11

N.Y. wireless came saying N.Y. Times carried our communication.<sup>302)</sup>

At 11 a.m. Dr. E. Debries representing a Suisse News Syndicate 9 rue des Alpes, Geneva, came according to an appointment and interviewed until 12:45 p.m. He would write a long article for German and French papers and would let me read the proof before releasing it. He asked for a photo and biography which Seu furnished.

### February 12

Sunday, I went to the English Quaker meeting. Johnson called up and said the League members and press men are consulting about what they should do with our communication and that we will soon get reaction on our statement. In the afternoon I went to call

300) Maxim Maximovich Litvinov (1876–1951) was People's Commissar for Foreign Affairs of the Soviet Union.

301) Gilbert transmitted Rhee's letter to Secretary Stimson with some commentary predicting that Rhee would be unsuccessful in presenting his case to the League of Nations. Gilbert mentioned in his letter that Rhee was well known to the State Department. See Gilbert to Stimson, 8 February 1933, *Foreign Relations of the United States, 1933, Vol. III, The Far East* (Washington, D.C.: Government Printing Office, 1949), 159.

302) "Appeal Is Made for Korea", *New York Times*, 9 February 1933.

on Dr. Wadsworth and he said our communication was so nicely prepared and worded that he was going to write me and congratulate me. Those who received a copy of it cannot help being convinced.

[End Daybook 5]<sup>303)</sup>

### February 13

Since the presentation of our letter to the League Feb. 8, many friends highly commented on the “dignified” and “experienced” way of stating the situation, especially on the first paragraph in which the letter was addressed to the Secretary and to the “member States”, which made it obligatory on the Secretary to circulate the letter to all the members. Johnson called up and said the League members as well as the press men were discussing among themselves about what they should do about it.

Meanwhile, the newspapers came out with the resolutions being adopted by the 19 members committee against Japan and Roosevelt, U.S. President-elect declared he would support the League and Stimson policy while Sir John Simons, the British Foreign Secretary was openly against any measure to be adopted by the League against Japan. Seu has been reporting that the Chinese were distributing Wellington Koo’s statement complimentary to me and I said to Seu that since they failed to fulfill their promise to present our case they are trying to throw the sop to me.

Since Feb. 13 I have been working on a paper based on the Lytton Report demanding that the League declare all the Koreans in Manchuria as non-Japanese, at least their right to be naturalized in China or other state as they may choose. It was clearly pointed in the Lytton Report that Japan refused to recognize the Chinese naturalization

303) Immediately following this entry Rhee wrote, “To be continued in the other book.” Presumably there was a daybook between Daybook 5 and Daybook 7, but it is no longer extant.

paper. So I have prepared this paper with the hope of arousing the League’s interest in the problem.

### February 16

Some one called up on the phone and said that he is Wellington Koo’s Secretary and that he wanted to come and see me about a statement the Chinese Delegation would present to the League in behalf of Korea. So I told him to come the following afternoon. Feb. 18 at 3 p.m. he came to Hotel de Russie and presented his card as Wunsz King. Then he produced a draft of statement prepared for me to sign, protesting in behalf of the Koreans in Manchuria the establishment (of) an independent “Manchukuo.” Since the League Assembly is going to meet on Tuesday, Feb. 21, this paper should be handed in the Monday afternoon at the latest. I told him that I would look it over and let him have it inside an hour so that he could get it ready for my signature. After he went, I found it entirely unsatisfactory and tried to rewrite the whole thing but Seu advised me not to change the entire text. That was a wise opinion and I took out certain paragraphs and added to it the condition of the Koreans in Manchuria and their sentiment. I went to his house after dinner and he and I went over it quite thoroughly. He said he would get it ready Sunday afternoon the 19th and would call me up.

### February 19

Sunday at about 5 p.m. King called up and said the paper was ready for signature. I sent for it at Koo’s residence and he sent one letter to Dr. Yen, and a statement, also two copies of each for my file<sup>304)</sup>. So I sent the original back after I signed.

304) Probably the “Statement of the Koreans in Manchuria”, which was published in *League of Nations Official Journal, Special Supplement No. 112: Records of the Special Session of the Assembly...* (Geneva, 1933), 53–55. This document has been reprinted in Appendix K to Lew, *The Making of the First Korean President*.

## February 20

Monday I worked all day on the paper discussing the Korean question in Manchuria. Wireless message from Honolulu inquiring further development. In reply, I said, "League is still hoping to keep Japan in the League cannot support our claim. Chance will come later. Can you remit more fund, we must publish extracts from the Lytton Report."

## February 21

In the morning Miss Anne Meriam and Mrs. Brown of Lausanne University came and I asked them to stay for lunch. After lunch we went over to the League where first Assembly meeting convenes at 3:30 p.m. The Assembly hall, with all windows toward the Lake, was packed. President Hyman delivered a speech in French, copies of which in French were distributed and then announced that the Assembly meeting will be held the coming Friday. The meeting was dismissed and many people expressed disappointment.

## February 22

Dr. W.W. Yen presented our statement to the League and Secretary Teuval<sup>305</sup> circulated it protesting against the establishment of an independent Manchukuo because not only Manchuria will suffer Korea's fate but over a million Koreans there who were driven out of their adopted country and have nowhere to go.

I have devoted myself to the preparation of manuscripts for "The Koreans in Manchuria."<sup>306</sup>

305) The reference is unclear. Rhee may be referring to Joseph Luis Anne Avenol (1879–1952). Avenol did not officially assume the position of secretary general of the League of Nations until July 1933, but he had been appointed in December 1932. Eric Drummond (1876–1951) was officially secretary general at this time.

306) Syngman Rhee, *The Koreans in Manchuria* (Paris: Agence Korea, 1933).

## March 4

The manuscript on "The Koreans in Manchuria" was given to Madam Fleur de Lys of Multigraph Office. I had seen several publishers but this was the cheapest.

I received a telephone call from Zurich stating that he was <이한호><sup>307</sup> and he would come to visit me the next morning. He had written to me to the effect that he was one of my pupils in Seoul High School<sup>308</sup> when I was principal and that he had been in Europe over ten years and that he saw my picture in one of the German newspapers and knew I was in Geneva. After receiving that phone call I wired Seu Ringhai that I could not come to Paris on that account.

## March 5

I stayed in the hotel on account of <이한호>'s<sup>307</sup> visit. He came at about 12 o'clock and I was glad to meet him. He said he was teaching a class of Jujitsu in Zurich and he was well known among athletics because he played hockey game. Every week he goes out with a team to play other teams and this Sunday he was to play in Berne but on account of the wet ground the game was called off. So he decided to come to see me. He married a Suisse girl and both are struggling hard to pull together. He stayed with me in the adjoining room overnight. Monday morning he went home leaving with me his standing invitation.

## March 6

At 2:30 p.m. I left Geneva on a trip to Paris. At 11:30 p.m. I reached Paris and was met at the station by Seu Ringhai. We came to Trianon Palace hotel, 1 rue de Vaugirard Paris 6.

During my visit in Paris, Mr. Seu took me around the city largely on trolleys, subway cars, and on foot through parks, Bois de Boulogne and Gaumont movie in the evening.

307) Rhi (Lee) Han-ho (1895–1960), judo expert and later the ROK's first consul general to West Germany.

308) Probably a reference to the Seoul YMCA, where Rhee worked, 1910–11.

We spent most of the time in trying to secure a copy of the Lytton Report in English for printing but we failed. Meanwhile I received a telegram from Honolulu forwarded from Geneva stating that my expense to stay in Geneva for one year is provided for. Having failed to get a copy of the Lytton Report in Paris, we could not print it in Paris. I decided to return to Geneva at once and send it to Seu from there.

### March 9

At 11:10 I left Paris and came to Geneva at 9:15 p.m. I stopped at the same hotel, occupying the same room, no. 46.

### April 9

Sunday, there was a special spring ski contest in Rochers de Naye and Mrs. Brown, her son Bortao and Miss Anne Meriam accompanied me with their skis and made a trip in the morning. I met them at Lausanne at 8:05 a.m. and changed train at Montreux. We climbed the mountain for two hours on a cog railway up to the top of the mountain, known as Rochers de Naye about 7,000 feet high. We saw the ski contest. The most thrilling part of the contest was the jumping contest in which some of the skiers jumped 240 ft. We had lunch in the hotel and returned in the evening.

Montreux is one of the most beautiful places I ever visited. I saw an old castle, Chateau de Chillon, where Byron composed his famous poems. The Prisoner of Chillon.

### April 13

At 10:55 a.m. I left Geneva on an express train to Zurich. H. Rhi <ㅇ|한호><sup>307</sup> who is living in Zurich invited me to come and spend Easter with him.

On the train, I met a Suisse young man and a Brazilian young lady, both speaking English well and we had pleasant conversations together.

Arriving at 4 p.m. in Zurich, Mr. Rhi met me at the station and we walked to a near-by coffee house where he and his friends often resort to. He telephoned to his people and

Mr. Muller or Miller and his wife came in their large Ford car to take me to the house. Mrs. Muller is Rhi's wife's sister, and Muller being an architect and captain of Zurich Hockey team, is quite a prospering young man. We came to Rhi's house and I met Mrs. Rhi who seems to be very glad to meet me and entertained me.

After leaving my baggage in a pension where Rhi had engaged a room for me, we went out in Muller's car for dinner. After dinner we went to Zurich Hockey Club where Muller as captain and Rhi as <선수><sup>309</sup> had a meeting to discuss plans for the Hockey Contest which comes this Saturday with a Spanish team. I met many interesting men and after that we went to the concert at the Elite hotel.

### April 14

Mr. Rhi and I went out to the lake side and walked to the park on the South side of the Lake Zurich. We hired a row boat and rowed for an hour. Then we came to Rhi's home and dinner <was> prepared by Mrs. Rhi. After dinner we started on a trip to Rhinefall, about 50 miles from Zurich. Muller drove his own new Ford car and four of us, including Muller, his wife being unable to join us. Rhinefall is a beautiful place and we took several pictures with Rhi's new kodak.

### April 15

Saturday we went to see the Zurich Hockey Club play vs. a Spanish club.

### April 16

Easter Sunday. At 8:30 a.m. we started a special tour on Muller's new Ford; Muller and wife, Rhi and wife and myself. We drove along the Southern side of the Zurich lake, passing through Wadenswil, Lachen, Siebnen, Mollis, Walensee (lake), Walenstadt, Sargans, Ragaz, Chur, Lenzerheide, Davos, Klosters, Buchs, Gams, Wattwil, Rapperswil,

<sup>309</sup> "Player" (e.g., hockey player).

Meilen and back to Zurich at 9:15 p.m. along the northern side of the Zurich Lake. We made altogether about 400 miles. Walensee is a beautiful lake up in the high mountain. We looked down from the beautiful auto drive-way running zigzag through many small villages.

We passed many places while the ruins of old castles standing some places on the high mountain top, some on high cliffs. We stopped in the valley where Mt. Melz stands by the winding river of the Rhine, and spread blankets and cushions on the grass and wild flowers and took pictures while eating Easter eggs and other refreshments brought by the ladies. Next we stopped in Chur, the beautiful little village by the Rhine. This is the historical spot where the Suisse people defeated an overwhelming army of Italians invading the country about 308 years ago. From Chur we climbed up the high mountain path again where the summit is over 6,000 ft. from the sea level. Most of the path was so narrow that driving is perilous. But Muller being a very experienced driver, he made high speed nearly all the way through. At Lenzerheide we picked flowers and baked ourselves in the sun. The next famous place is Davos which is situated in a high altitude, with many beautiful hotels and a great hospital for consumptives where many Americans are said to come. We stopped there for tea. From there we drove back without stopping. The weather was ideal and the friends did all they could to make the trip interesting and I can never forget it.

#### April 17

Easter holiday Monday. Rhi, his wife and I went up to Uetliberg mountain, just like 〈南山〉<sup>310</sup> in Seoul and the view of the city and the lake and mountains could be seen in all directions. It was a very steep climb. At the top, we had tea in the garden. After it, we walked down to the woods and laid ourselves on the grass taking sun bath as many people were doing it all around us. In the evening we had dinner with the Mullers at the City Excel-

<sup>310</sup>) Namsan, a prominent mountain in Seoul.

sior Hotel and coffee at the Mercantile Tea House. I stopped at the City Excelsior Hotel overnight.

#### April 18

At 11:55 a.m. I left Zurich. Rhi and wife and Muller and wife both came to the hotel, City Excelsior Hotel and we all came to the R.R. station in Muller's car. When the train pulled out of the station, the ladies were weeping and I felt so bad that I could not get over the sadness of the parting.

At Lausanne I got off the train and telephoned Meriam but both she and Mrs. Brown were out and I returned to the train which brought me to Geneva at 5 p.m. Hotel de Russie manager was glad to see me back and 〈I〉 took the same room, no. 39.

#### April 25

Took lunch with Prentiss Gilbert, American Consul-General. We drove out in his car to a little country place where he thought we would have a quiet talk. But when we sat in the dining room a bunch of Japanese came in and occupied a table in the next room. We did not talk but after lunch we drove out to the country and parked on the roadside and chatted a while. He thought it would be hard to get any other league member except the Chinese to take up our question and that my plan to go to Russia was interesting.

In the afternoon I had a talk with Hoo Chi Tsai 〈胡世澤〉 the permanent Chinese delegate and in charge of the delegation in the absence of Drs. Yen and Koo and Quo. I spoke to him about the registration in the league of the Korean treaties<sup>311</sup> with most of the powers and of the advisability of presenting another document to the League. He said he wanted to see me that time because Koo was leaving that afternoon and that if there was anything that I wanted him to do he might consult Koo before he departs. He

<sup>311</sup>) Rhee is referring to the treaties signed between the Kingdom of Chosen and the leading powers of the late 19th century, including the United States and Japan. For the text of these treaties, see Henry Chung, ed., *Korean Treaties* (New York: H.S. Nichols, 1919).

also said that he thought it was not a good time to do anything in the League while Koo and Quo are going to Washington for Conferences.

#### April 28

I invited Hoo to lunch at the hotel and we had a nice talk together in the private dining room while eating. He promised to get the Russian visa on my passport realizing that my going to Russia to meet some of the Russian authorities through Dr. Yen and also to go to Siberia to have some understanding with our leaders there.

#### April 29

I had lunch with Merle Davis and Bertram Pickard at Hotel de Russie. We discussed the Far Eastern and Korean problems and read my paper urging the League to take some action on “sanctions” according to the League Covenants—16th Article.

Dr. Hoo called up and said the Russian delegates would send my recommendation either to Paris or Berlin as most convenient for me and I said I would go to Paris some time next week. He said if I go to their Embassy in Paris, they will give the visa on my passports.

In the afternoon <이한호 내외><sup>312)</sup> and Muller and wife came to Geneva on their auto and stayed overnight at Hotel de Russie.

#### April 30

Sunday morning, we started on an auto tour through Bonneville Chamonix where glaciers covered mountains, St. Maurice and along the South shore of the Lake, Lac Lemman<sup>313)</sup>, and stopped overnight at Hotel de Regence in Evian a beautiful little town on the lake side, just opposite Lausanne. From Chamonix to Martigny, the narrow zig-zag road along the cliffs and up and down the mountains was quite dangerous. There we crossed

312) “Mr. and Mrs. Rhi Han ho.”

313) Lake Geneva in French.

a wrong bridge and traveled along a very perilous path nearly half a mile or more but we had to come all the way back until we found the main road. It was beautiful in the morning but later it rained. We crossed the French and Suisse boundary lines four times and at each time the customs officers of both countries examined our car, license, passports and auto box, as they do with every car that passes over the line. They were all courteous and we had no trouble.

#### May 1

Monday morning we went out on a row boat with fishing hook and line. After that we went through the market in Evian and returned to Geneva along the lake shore. During the trip Rhi <이한호> and I talked over the plan of our proposed trip. They returned to Zurich at noon. Upon my return to Geneva from the tour, I found the Honolulu cable message concerning the trip to Vienna and Berlin.

#### May 2

Had a conference with Hoo Chi Tsai, the Chinese permanent delegate at their headquarters, 18 rue Charles Galland. We took up the question of presenting to the League a statement urging the League to take up an action of “sanctions” against Japan under Article 16 of the League Covenant. I spoke to him about some one to accompany me in my proposed trip to Russia. Then he invited me to a Chinese lunch at the residence of the Chinese delegation at 1 p.m. the following day.

#### May 3

According to a previous engagement, I called at the office of Dr. Christian Lange, Chairman of the Advisory Commission on the Sino-Japanese question, appointed by the Assembly of the League of Nations. We had a long talk on the Far Eastern Situation. He asked many questions relating to Japan and he said he was convinced that Japan wants war with any nation. He further said that the League has been preparing for some action

and there will be something done by the League much sooner than the public may think it will. When I raised the question as to the possibility of Korea being admitted to the League as a member he said there was an unofficial discussion in the League but it was agreed that Korea could not be admitted and he still thinks it will be a waste of time if we bring up that question now. He was very courteous and cordial and thanked me again and again for the call.

Then it was about lunch time and I went to the Chinese headquarters. Mr. and Mrs. Hoo, Mr. and Mrs. King, the secretary to Wellington Koo, and another Chinese. We had a real Chinese dinner and Mrs. Hoo invited me to take lunch with them again. It was very pleasant lunch and we talked much about Korean and Chinese situation.

#### May 5

I mailed letter to all the Governments with which Korea made treaty of Commerce except Russia, requesting them to supply me with a certified copy of the Treaty, etc. Preparatory to the registration in the League of the Korean treaties.

Dr. Juris Antoine Sottile came to see me and showed me his magazine the International Law Review, or Revue De Droit International, and suggested that about F. 2500 will issue an article on Korea in his magazine which is a quarterly periodical. I told him that I would think it over. He is the permanent delegate from Liberia, Office Route de Chene 105, Geneva, Suisse. Phone 46-638.

#### May 9

The League of Nation's Secretariat's acknowledgement of the receipt of our communication at its registry office.

In the morning I went up to the top of Saleve, <a high mountain in Geneva> 4,000 ft. above sea level, and walked back. I climbed over the precipice on Geneva side, ground being muddy and slippery, I had to hold on to trees and bushes. In the intermittent rain and sunshine, I got wet several times. Two Chinese ladies I met at the Telepherique sta-

tion and we walked together up to the part where the surveyor's station is. I took my lunch at the small restaurant near the top XIII Arbres restaurant.

There was no one else eating there that day and I ate outdoors and took pictures, the little waitress holding the kodak. I returned to the hotel at 5:30 p.m.

I had much difficulty in collecting the loan of \$120 from Berlin and wired several times to Lord Kirschner wrote to his sister and Miss F. Donner<sup>314</sup>, Hotel de Russie also wrote to the bank in Berlin and at last the bank sent the money.

#### May 11

The Chinese permanent delegate, Hoo Chi Tsai, sent me a letter of introduction to the Chinese Minister at Berlin as follows:

〈塵蘇公使 勛鑒 久違德輝 時切遐思 敬維[惟]政祺懋著 爲無量頌 茲有懇者 韓國總統 李承晚先生 Dr. Syngman Rhee 客歲因公來瑞 時值中日交涉緊急 代[對]我極表同情 與我代表團方面 時多往來 刻 先生 將由瑞付[赴]德 特囑作函介紹 務懇接見 不勝感謝 專此敬頌 並候潭[簞, 覃]吉 胡世澤 謹啓 五月 十一日

(封皮) 敬頌 李承晚先生 帶交

劉公使塵蘇 勛啓

胡世澤 拜下〉

[Translation]

Esteemed Minister Chensu,

For a long time I have not been able to see your honorable countenance but I think about you frequently. I hope your work is going well. May you receive unlimited blessings. Here I have a request for you. Last year the president of Korea Dr. Syngman Rhee

314) Francesca (or Franziska) Maria Barbara Donner (1900–1992) was an Austrian interpreter working at the League of Nations when she met Rhee. Rhee and Donner married in 1934. She would serve as the First Lady of Korea from 1948–60.

came to Switzerland on an official visit. At that time China and Japan were negotiating, he expressed great sympathy for us and we met him many times. Now he is intending to go from Switzerland to Germany and he has asked me for a letter of introduction. If you are able to meet him, I could not thank you enough. I respectfully hope you and your family are well.

Respectfully,

Hoo Chi Tsai

[on the envelope]

Please see this letter carried personally by Syngman Rhee.

To Minister Liu Chen-su

Hoo Chi Tsai

I humbly bow.

### May 18

I left Geneva at 11:50 a.m. and stopped at Hotel de Belle-vue in Glion above Montreux, Room 104. I left my trunk and Dr. Miller's new book "Beginnings of Tomorrow"<sup>315)</sup> with Landrie, the clerk of Hotel de Russie.

### May 19

I walked down to Territet and to the Castle of Chillon. I met a company of English people and went through the old dungeons, halls and towers where Bonivard<sup>316)</sup> was chained to the columns for four years, as well as the spot where Byron wrote his name

315) Herbert Adolphus Miller, *The Beginnings of To-Morrow; an Introduction to the Sociology of the Great Society* (New York: D.C. Heath, 1933). Chapter nine of the book, "The Case of Korea", focused on the Korean independence movement.

316) Francois Bonivard (1493–1570) was a Genevan ecclesiastic imprisoned in the Castle of Chillon for his political activism. Bonivard's imprisonment was the inspiration for Lord Byron's romantic poem *The Prisoner of Chillon*.

on the third pillar. Had a little lunch in a restaurant, walked to the American Express and thence returned to the Hotel by electric car.

### May 20

Believue Hotel<sup>317)</sup> 早起.

好鳥啼何早

樓中遠客眠

津湖無限景

最是曉山天

津湖指 (Geneva Lake)

[Translation]

Upon Arising Early at Believue Hotel

A beautiful bird sings from the early hours

A weary traveler dozes within a manor far away

Within the endless scenery of Geneva Lake

The morning skies and mountains are the most magnificent<sup>318)</sup>

### May 21

I left Montreux and Glion at 2:44 p.m. Took the Milan-Paris Express train on 3rd class and reached Paris at 11:10 p.m. Seu Ringhai met me at the station and drove to the Hotel Royal Trianon, Room 92.

317) Probably a misspelling of Hotel de Belle-vue. See entry for 18 May 1933.

318) Translation by Daniel Dongwu Kim.

## May 22

I moved to Hotel des Americains, 133 Boulevard Saint Michael Room 20.

## May 27

Dr. and Mrs. Louis Rousseau of 17 Ave. MacMahon, Paris invited me and “Secretary” Seu to tea at Le Colisee and later to the fashionable dancing hall “Lido”. The latter is known as the most elaborate and famous place in Paris.

## May 28

I went to Versailles by street car and returned in the afternoon. On the way back I stopped at San Cloud, the famous resort and old palace ground.

Meanwhile I visited Louvre Museum, the Chinese Art Exposition, the Paris Commercial Exposition, the Paris Art Exposition, the churches of Notre Dame, Madeleine and St. Augustin.

## May 30

I went to see the international tennis tournament at the Stadium, Roland-Garros Auteuil. Itoh and Cochet played but Itoh was weak and lost the game. The main contest of the day was the singles tournament held in the Stadium, 21,000 sitting capacity, between Prenn, Germany and Lee, England and between Bernard, France, and Stefani of Italy. In the two games, Prenn and Stefani lost.

During this visit in Paris the main purpose was to get Russian Visa on my passport. On May 23, I called at the Russian Consulate at 79 Grenelle St. and asked them if any letter of recommendation was received from Geneva. The Consul told me that he did not receive it and that such a letter would be necessary if I wanted a passport which is more than a transit passport. I wired and wrote twice to Hoo Chi Tsai, the Chinese permanent delegate at Geneva, asking him to get that recommendation which his Russian friend had promised. No reply came until the 30th when I wrote Blanco about it. The letter from Hoo said he was still trying to get in touch with his friend, etc.

## June 3

I received letter from Kee Young Chang<sup>319)</sup>, in charge of Korean Commission saying that he has to leave Washington owing to the lack of fund and close the K.C. office and let P.O. forward mail to New York. I at once cabled Honolulu saying I would return to Washington to save K.C. and also cabled N.Y. asking them to save K.C. The following day cable reply came from Honolulu urging me to make the trip before returning to U.S. Saturday afternoon I went to the R. consulate but it was a little late and the office was closed. Monday morning I went to the Consulate with an Austrian student, Miss Sinnerich, as interpreter and saw Mr. Antonoff, the Consulate General and he said he received no letter from Geneva. So I asked him to send my application to his home Government and get the instruction by wire. I paid the cable expense in advance and promised to let me know upon the receipt of the instruction.

Then Miss Sinnerich went to the German Consulate but they refused to visae it saying that my passport was not a regular passport.

## June 6

Tuesday, after the Whitsuntide holidays<sup>320)</sup> were over, the American Express office opened again and through them I received two cables, one from Hoo in Geneva saying his friend promised to send the recommendation to Paris and the other from Honolulu urging me to go to R. as they will send more money. At once I went to the R. Consulate and made application for (Rhi's) passport visa.

But I got the blanks to fill up for Han ho. I could not do it myself so I sent the passport and the blanks to him by air mail to Zurich and waited for his reply.

319) Chang (장기영, Kee Yong Chang, 1903 – 1981), a member of the Korean commission, volunteered to participate in an Office of Strategic Services (OSS) training program for Koreans in the Spring of 1943. After the program Chang became a private in the U.S. Army and served in China. He briefly served as Mayor of Seoul, 1960.

320) A term for Pentecost chiefly used in the United Kingdom and Ireland.

## June 10

Early in the morning the mail came from Han ho at St. Gallen a mountain resort with his family and Mullers. So I took the application and filed at the Russian Consulate, Mr. Antonoff the Consul General. But he needed three pictures of Han ho before he could send the passport to Moscow. I told him that I would write Han ho for them.

Then I went to the Czechoslovak Consulate for visa and asked them for transit visa. They asked my destination and I told them that I was going to Poland. They told me to get the Polish visa first and then they will visae it. So I decided to wait until the Russian visa comes first.

Among all the Governments to which I wrote requesting them for copies of the Korean treaties, the Belgian Government is the only one which so far has complied with our request by sending a complete copy. The Danish foreign office replied that they cannot give it.

A letter from Malcolm Davis, Geneva Research Work, says that the League Covenant is that all treaties must be registered by one of the parties to them and that this included the treaties contracted before the League was organized.

## June 11

At 10:15 a.m. Sunday, I left Paris for London by the Dieppe-Newhaven route which is the cheapest line. At 6:30 p.m. I reached London and drove on taxi to Royal Hotel on Russell Square and took the room 5087. Then called up Williams (W. Llew)<sup>321</sup> who came at once and took dinner together. He would wait my phone call the next day.

[Begin Daybook 7 June 1933 – August 1933]

<sup>321</sup> W. Llewellyn Williams was the honorary secretary of the League of Friends of Korea in the United Kingdom during the early 1920s.

## June 12

I called up the Chinese Legation but Mr. Quo Tai Chi, the Minister, and his wife being out, I talked with Mr. Collins on the phone. He said he would come to see me the next morning but he could not come then. So I went to the Legation and he took me through the building. When we went to the main drawing room, we sat down to talk. I explained that I want to go to Russia and for that reason I wanted to see Quo and Yen. He said he would talk to Quo and let me know the next day. He said Drs. Yen and Koo were at Savoy Hotel and T.V. Soong<sup>322</sup> at Dorchester Hotel.

The World Economic Conference opened today at 3 p.m. with speeches by the King and the Prime Minister at the Theological Museum, the Chinese delegates were quite busy.

W. Llew Williams came and we had a long talk “over tea cups” listening to the radio, commenting on the speeches of the King and the Premier. He asked me to meet some of our leading friends in the Parliament and among newspaper men. I told him that the foreign policy of the British Government in relation to the Far Eastern problems is short-sighted and as long as that policy continues, we have no chance to see Britain doing anything that might offend Japan. No European nation will ever be able to face Japan. It is only the United States which will some day challenge the growing menace of Japan. If the British statesmen are far-sighted enough to see how Japan undermines the British interests, they should join hands with the United States, stop flirting with Japan and check the military aggression which threatens the peace of the world, etc.

## June 14

Williams called up and said that he made an appointment with Lord Mamhead, a member of the House of Peers, and former chairman of the League of the Friends of Korea, at

<sup>322</sup> Soong (1891 – 1971), a prominent Chinese politician and businessman. He was the brother-in-law of Chiang Kai-shek and Sun Yat-sen.

12:45 p.m. So I went down to meet Williams at the National Liberal Club and thence we walked down to meet Mamhead. Mamhead treated us to tea and we discussed the Far Eastern situation. After that Williams and I had lunch at the National Liberal Club.

#### June 15

Took a bus tour to Windsor Castle, Stoke Poges (Church yard), Eton Colleges, Hampton Court Palace, etc. I returned just in time to meet Mr. Williams and his sister at the hotel to take dinner together.

After dinner Williams urged me to go and see Mr. Grey, Editor of London Times and had a short talk with him.

#### June 16

I asked Mr. Collins to come to lunch with me and he urged me not to leave without seeing Minister Quo. He said the Chinese Legation should be glad to get the visa for me and that they would write their embassy in Moscow about my coming. He said Quo called me up but he could not get me. Afterwards he called up and said Quo would be glad to see me at 10 a.m. the next day.

#### June 17

At 10 a.m. I called at the Chinese Legation and Minister Quo called up the Russian Embassy about passport visa but the Russian Minister was out. So he said he would call up and let me know through Mr. Collins later. Later in the morning I called and Collins said Quo had talked to them on the phone and they said that could be arranged but they have to consider the matter a little while. So Collins said if I were you, I would sit tight and leave the matter in our hands until Monday or Tuesday, today being Saturday. So I told him that I would do so and wait till I hear from him again on Monday.

#### June 21

I wrote to Mr. Collins saying that having called up the Legation several times but received no reply either from him or Minister Quo, I have come to the conclusion that the Russian visa is harder to obtain than it was thought and that I will leave for Paris tomorrow evening. I stated also that since you kindly advised me to stay over until Monday or perhaps Tuesday I waited to hear from you, etc.

#### June 22

No word came from the Chinese Legation and I decided to leave London in the following day.

#### June 23

At 10 a.m. I left London, Victoria station by third class train via Newhaven-Dieppe, the cheapest route between London and Paris and reached Paris, Gare Lazare at 5:55 p.m. From the station I drove by taxi to Hotel des Americains and took the same room no. 20 which I occupied before. Later I went to Agence Korea to see about mail but Seu was out.

#### June 24

At 9 a.m. I went to the Russian Consulate to find out about the passport visa but it was closed on Saturday so I have to wait until Monday.

#### June 25

Sunday, I went to Bois de Boulogne with Mr. Gumberg, a German young man stopping at the same hotel.

## June 26

I went to the Russian Consulate but was closed on Monday. The policeman saw me knocking at the gate and came and showed me the brass door place which bears notice that the Consulate does not open on Monday.

## June 27

Tuesday I called at the Russian Consulate and Mr. Antonoff, Consulate General, said that the reply came from Moscow and that he could visae my passport.

With the Russian visa I went to the Czechoslovak Consulate and was told to get the Polish visa first. So I went to the Polish Consulate and secured it. Then I went to the Czechoslovak [Consulate] and got the transit visa. After lunch I went to the Tourist department of a R.R. Co. on the Opera Square and purchased a third class railroad ticket to Lausanne to leave Paris the following morning.

## June 28

I went to the Russian Consulate and asked the Consul to notify Rhi Han ho in Zurich when he receive the reply from Moscow about Rhi's passport visa. He said he would and I left Rhi's passport with him. Then I told him who I am and asked him if he would give me a letter of introduction to his Government authority in Moscow and he said it was not necessary because his Government already knows who I am and that the Foreign Commission gave him the order to visa my passport which is hard to get, and that if I notify the Commission when I reach there, they will be glad to see me. So I left Rhi's passport and decided to go to Geneva. I have to wait till the reply comes.

## June 29

I left Paris at 9:30 a.m. Lyon station by third class and reached Geneva at 7 p.m. changing train at Lausanne (for) Hotel de Russie.

## July 4

At 11:08 a.m. I left Geneva and travelling by way of Lausanne and the beautiful lakes of Neuchatel and Biel came to Zurich at 4 p.m. Mr. Rhi Han ho met me at the station and after stopping for coffee at the well known coffee house near the station. Later, Muller and Rhi brought the baggage from the station and stayed in a private pension, a rooming house near Rhi's house on Brandschenkestr, 20. My trunk is left in Hotel de Russie, Geneva with the hotel clerk, Charles Landry.<sup>323)</sup>

## July 7

At 8 a.m. I left Zurich for Vienna. Henry Muller, Mr. and Mrs. Rhi came to take me to the station on Muller's car— (Left on train) third class. At 10:20 p.m. I reached Vienna. I took a taxi at first to a hotel near the station but the hotel looks cheap and charges more than it is said to be charging and I came to Kummer Hotel recommended by American Express in Zurich. I took room 11. I at once wrote to Miss Kirschner and Miss Donner.

## July 8

I called up the Chinese Legation and the Minister, Dekien Taung says he is glad that I am here and I told him that I would call to see him at 5 p.m. Then I went to American Express and found a couple of letters awaiting, one from F. Donner and the other from J.R. Reeves.

At 5 p.m. I went to the Legation and Mr. Taung treated me to tea and cakes. I told him my plans and left my passport to get the German and Hungarian visas for me by Monday. Then he said he would come to the [hotel] Sunday morning at 12 o'clock and take me to the Imperial Hotel for dinner, after which he would take me around the city for sightseeing. He wants me to meet the Russian Minister and the Indian leader<sup>324)</sup> of

323) Likely the same clerk identified by Rhee as "Landrie" in the entry for 18 May 1933.

324) Rhee wrote in the margin of Daybook 7: "Mr. Patel, President of National Congress of India." This is a reference to Vallabhbhai Patel (1875 – 1950), an Indian nationalist and independence activist.

the Pan-Indian Congress, a loyal supporter of Gandhi, both being his personal friends. The Russian Minister is ill at present and he hopes that he will get well while I am here.

### July 9

In the morning visited Schonbrunn Palace with friends. About half past twelve Mr. Taung came to the hotel and took me to the Imperial Hotel, the best hotel in Vienna where kings and diplomats stop and, as previously arranged by him, we occupied a separate section of the big dining hall and had dinner. During the course of dinner we discussed the situation and he would get some way to inform the authorities in Moscow of my coming and of my desire to meet them, etc.

After dinner we drove to an apartment where Mr. and Mrs. Ching-Yi Tang, Professor Chiao Tung University, Shanghai, and Chindon Yui Tang, his wife, 〈俞慶堂〉<sup>325</sup> Professor of Provincial College of Education, Wusib, China, were living with two other Chinese, and I was introduced to them by Mr. Taung. The Tangs are going back to China soon and pledged to do anything they can for us. Mr. Taung and I drove up to the Palace Hotel or Schloss Hotel on Kobenzl from where we looked down on the entire city of Vienna. There I saw Kahlenberg Mountain, and a large castle near the end of the Alberg range in front of which the Danube river which passes through Budapest goes down through the wide open plain. We had tea in the garden in front of the hotel where many people were gazing at us and the hotel manager and waiters made a lot of courtesies and ceremony to the Chinese Minister. They did the same in the Hotel Imperial and also at the large coffee house where we stopped to look around later. Mr. Taung was quite disappointed when I told him that I had visited the old Schonbrunn Palace which now is a museum, keeping the old palace as it was in olden times. The Schonbrunn garden is also very fine. He was still going to show me around but I told him that I had an appointment at 6 p.m. He ordered the driver through the ground of Schwarzenberg Palace, the Opera Ring and

<sup>325</sup> Yu Qingtang.

Karntner Street and Hapsburg to Hotel Kummer at 5:40 p.m. In the evening Miss F. Donner took me out to Hermes Villa and returned in the evening. Mr. Taung promised to get in touch with the German Legation and also the Hungarian Minister to get the visas for me. He has my passport and will call me up as soon as he receives the visas.

### July 10

At 10 a.m. I went to the American Express but no word was received from Honolulu. Meanwhile the dollar exchange has dropped to 6.08, six schillings and eight groschen. American tourists asked American Express to cancel their booking for tours in Europe as the dollar decline is so sharp. I also asked American Express people to cancel my ticket to Moscow and they replied that I have to go to Zurich to get the fare refunded. So I sent one more cablegram to Honolulu as a last demand for funds. I had wired them from Paris, London, Geneva and Zurich but neither a word or remittance has ever been received. However, the passport is in the hands of the Chinese Minister and also the cable reply from Honolulu should be waited for and have decided to wait until tomorrow anyway.

At 3 p.m. Mr. Taung came to the hotel and handed me my passport with German and Hungarian visas saying the Germans would make or give permanent visa instead of a Transit one, if I so desired. I asked him how much the fees he had to pay and he said I needed not think of it. He brought a letter of introduction to the Chinese Charge d'affaires at Moscow, Dr. K.S. Weigh 〈魏良聲〉 and a copy of illustrated souvenir book of Vienna. He asked me to come out and visit several places of interest. We drove first to Prater Park which is similar to Bois de Boulogne of Paris. In the centre of the park there is the famous coffee house, Lust House, where we had coffee. We talked on various interesting subjects until a couple of Japanese came and took seats next to us. We left the place and drove to the other side of the park where an artist coffee house, Kriau Meierei, is open in the garden. There we had tea and as I told him that some one is coming to see me at six o'clock, he took me around the stadium, Rotunde, the fair ground, the Luna Park 〈Prater〉, etc. and brought me back to the hotel.

## July 11

At 1:30 p.m. I left Vienna by auto bus and reached Budapest at 8 p.m. and registered at Hotel Royal.

## Impressions:

Austria seems to be the poorest of the countries so far visited in Europe. In the street cars more appearance of poverty and misery than anywhere else. And the living expense is cheaper.

Budapest, situated on the Danube, is more picturesque. There seems to be more money and the city is crowded everywhere and the Quai<sup>326</sup>, or the centre of Budapest social life, is the most crowded public squares I have ever seen. The trip between Vienna and Budapest is peculiarly interesting to me because the country is a vast open plain covered with harvest, showing the extensive farming in the entire region. The farming is done by hand power and all along the road grass houses built more or less like those in the Orient.

## July 12

I visited Royal Castle, Danube Kai<sup>327</sup>, Coronation Church, Fischerbastei<sup>328</sup> (part of the Castle), Parliament buildings on the Danube, Opera, Fortress on the hill top overlooking the river, etc. At 1:20 p.m. I left Budapest by the auto bus and returned to Vienna at 8 p.m. Upon my arrival at Kummer Hotel, the clerk informed me to call up the Chinese Legation. Mr. Taung replied and said that he had called me up in order to find out whether I would stay over a day or two because he wanted me to meet the Russian Minister. I told him that I was to go away next morning but I might stay over. If the meeting could be arranged in a day it would be better, but if that cannot be possible, I will wait for another day. He said he would call up the Russian Minister and let me know.

<sup>326</sup>) A reference to the banks of the Danube, also known as the Danube Promenade.

<sup>327</sup>) Possibly an alternate spelling of "Quai."

<sup>328</sup>) Fisherman's Bastion in German.

## July 13

I went to the American Express but no message. The dollar has gone down still lower. Now it has reached 50% devaluation point but no one knows how much more it will drop. When I returned to the hotel there was a message from the Chinese Embassy. So I called up and Mr. Taung said a confidential dinner arrangement has been made to meet the Russian Minister and a lady at 1:30 p.m. tomorrow in the Imperial Hotel. So I promised to go there and he said he would wait for me there.

In the afternoon I made a side trip to (MÖdling) by train, about 10 miles from Vienna. While there I visited the old church below the hill and the memorial built in memory of a prince, Joseph, who was married but fell in love with a princess whom he shot to death first and then killed himself there.

## July 14

The Chinese Ambassador called up and said he would call at the hotel at 12:30 p.m. He came on time and we had a confidential talk. He said that the guests at the lunch would be the Russian Minister, Mr. Peterwsky<sup>329</sup>, his wife and Mme Shuster, the wife of his secretary and that I could tell the Minister confidentially all that I had revealed to him—the need of cooperation between R. A. C.<sup>330</sup> and Korea against the growing menace of Japan. Mr. Taung led me to his auto and we drove to the Imperial Hotel. The lunch was prepared in a large private dining room. Soon the guests arrived and in the midst of courtesies and kotows by the hotel clerks and waiters, we had our lunch in magnificent style. After lunch we came to the beautiful drawing room where coffee and cigarettes were served. We had a long conversation through Mme Shuster and the Minister promised to wire immediately to his Government telling them of my coming and requesting them to see to it that I be taken proper care upon my arrival in Moscow. He advised me to be very careful in order to avoid those whom I should not meet etc. Mrs. Peterwsky said she

<sup>329</sup>) Adolf Markovick Petrovsky (b. 1887).

<sup>330</sup>) Possibly "Russia, America, and China."

would send me the address of her sister who is living in Brooklyn, N.Y.

In the morning a notice came from American Express saying that there was a cable message waiting for me. I went to American Express and received the message from Honolulu wiring \$500. The money was in the bank which was closed for the day and I had to go there in the morning.

### July 15

After breakfast, I called up the Chinese Embassy and told him that I was leaving and I thanked him for all his help etc. He asked me the hour and station name of my departure. I told him that he should not come to the station to see me off as he must have his official duties to attend etc. He said he wants to do it for his pleasure as well as his duty.

I went to the Länder bank and got \$500 and hurried to the American Express to buy traveler's check. It was getting late for the train hour and many people were standing in line at the cashier's window. I tried to make a special appeal to the cashier but a big, elderly looking American stood against me and showing his card printed in Chinese asked, "Do you know this man?" (林柏克) or in English it sounds like Limberg. He is the Counselor of the Chinese Government and he was the first speaker at the Sun Yat Sen<sup>331</sup> memorial service at Washington in the winter of 1932 and I was called upon later to make a remark which was at that time applauded quite generously as I made a complementary remark on the Chinese 19 Route Soldiers who fought the Japanese in Shanghai. So I said, "I think I do but do you not recognize me?" He said, "Oh, you are Dr. Rhee. Sure, in Washington, you made a fine speech etc." People were all watching and listening and I told him that I was in great hurry to make train. He said, "It is all coming your way. You will be the President, etc." Then he told the ladies in line how little time I had to get to the train etc. They all stepped aside and let me go ahead. So I finally got to the cashier and got the traveler's check and drove to the East station. F. Donner had taken my bag-

<sup>331</sup> Sun (1866–1925) was a Chinese politician, revolutionary, and the founder of the Republic of China, 1912–49.

gage to the station and put them in a third class car which was jammed with crowds of people. It was just before the train pulled out. Mr. Taung came and wished me a bon voyage and said, "Your journey is so important and I wish you all success for China and Korea[?]. Mr. Taung stood in the front and Donner among the crowds waved at me until the train turned around at the curve.

It was 10:10 a.m. when I left Vienna. Such heat and crowds of people in the train which kept me standing at the passage way. Passing through the Zchecoslovak and Polish frontiers I finally decided to get a 2nd class seat, paying about \$3 extra. There I met a young man, George Leopold Ipsberg, son of the Minister of railroads in Estonia, who said his [father] was the chief engineer in the construction of the Siberian railroad during the Tsars in Russia. He asked me to visit Estonia as he wanted to show me his country.

At 11:20 p.m. I arrived at Warsaw and registered at Hotel Polonia which was recommended by the Esthonian young man. Room no. 601. Being Saturday night everything was closed including all the tourist bureaux from which information concerning the north-bound trains was to be obtained Monday, July 17, I found my way to the American Express's special representative, J. Tobolka, Warsaw Commercial Bank building, Cheakiego and Traugutta Sts. and found out that the only train for Moscow each day had gone and I had to wait till the following morning. He recommended that I may go over to see the In-tourist bureau people and gave me his secretary to show me the way. There they examined my passport and found out the Russia visa is no longer effective because its term expired on July 12. So I got a guide (Bogustow Marjan de Latour) to take me to the Russian Legation where I paid one half of the usual charge for tourist visa, since mine was a diplomatic visa originally and I secured the extension of a month. For the rest of the day I did some sight-seeing. The parks, palace grounds and the oldest part of Warsaw where stands the wine shop established in 1610 under the cellar of which the old Tartar princes were (chained) as homage, and where we had a bottle of honey<sup>332</sup> 15 years old.

<sup>332</sup> Possibly Krupnik, a Polish drink made of spirits and honey.

The historical marks of Poland showing the days of foreign control and of the restoration.

### July 18

At 7:10 a.m. I left Warsaw and the train running north passed along the wide open farmland. Sprinkled here and there were little huts which seem more like the Oriental farming villages than anything else I have seen. Men, women, and children work in the fields partly occupied by swarms and running streams with ducks and geese running wild and storks and cranes with their long necks watching the train pass by.

When we came near the border land Negorelage<sup>333</sup> about 6 p.m. Russian time we saw the both sides of the frontier heavily guarded. Uniformed soldiers on either side of the boundary were watching with field glasses and drawn bayonets—all these were extremely interesting. We changed trains there and started on the Russian side by special daily express at 7:45 p.m. and reached Moscow at 9:45 a.m. July 19. Met by the Intourist agent at Moscow station and drove in a big open car to New Moscow Hotel (in) which I was given the room no. 525.

At 7:10 a.m. I left Warsaw by 3rd class train for Moscow.

At 6 p.m. I changed train at Negorelage, the Polish Russian frontier. (There two hours set back.)

At 7:30 p.m. I left Negorelaze by a second class train with sleeper. I did not put down in my diary any account or impression of the trip for fear the Russians might suspect.

### July 19

At 9:30 a.m. (Moscow time) I arrived at Moscow and was met by the Intourist agent who came to the station to meet me and two Americans. It was understood that the Intourist Bureau at Negoreloze had wired them from Negoreloge informing them of our

<sup>333</sup> Present-day Nieharelaj, Belarus. Rhee used several spellings for this station over the following entries.

coming on that train. He took charge of our baggage and conducted us to a large Lincoln car, some 80 of which are said to be in the Intourist service, and drove us to the new Moscow Hotel (Room 525) just on the bank of the Moscow river opposite the Kremlin or Red Square. The hotel is known as a third class in the city. A lot of Americans stop there.

I agreed to buy a 5 day Intourist ticket, \$5 per day for hotel, meals, and sightseeing. To get one of their tickets is to secure their service. In order to be inconspicuous, I went out on an auto tour with other tourists. We returned at 2 p.m. and I was told by Miss G. Tobinon, an Intourist worker at the hotel lobby that “there was some one from the Foreign Office looking for you” and that if I were to stay in my room she would call him up. I thought that the Foreign Office sent some one to meet me at the cable request of Mr. Peterwsky, the Russian Minister at Vienna and I stayed in my room. I started to write a note as follows:

The Office of the Foreign Commissar, Moscow.

Sirs:

Having arrived from Warsaw, I desired to have a confidential interview with proper authorities of the Foreign Commissar at their earliest convenience. When in Vienna, I revealed to the Russian Minister, Hon. Peterwsky, the nature of my mission to Moscow and he expressed his approval and suggested that I write to you upon my arrival here.

I am stopping at the New Moscow Hotel and will wait for your kind reply, etc.

S.R.

The day was hot and sultry. As I was about to finish the letter it was nearly 4:30 p.m. Somebody knocked at the door. As I opened the door, Miss Tobinon came in with a young man and said, “Here is the officer representing the Foreign Office and I must come in with him in order to interpret for you.” As we all sat down, the young man said quite politely that “the Foreign Office feels very sorry to inform you that the visum they issued on your passport permitting you to enter Russia was done through oversight and that

they have to ask you to leave the country.” I showed him the letter I had just finished writing to the Foreign Office and said that although I came as an ordinary tourist, I have a definite mission the purpose of which I wanted to convey to the Foreign Office, that I was addressing the letter to the Foreign Commissar, that Mr. Antonoff, Russian Consul-General at Paris sent my application to Moscow authorities with the request that they send instructions by wire at my expense, that the Foreign Office did wire him the reply instructing him to give me the visum, that when in Vienna I revealed the nature of my Moscow visit to the Russian Ambassador, Mr. Peterwsky, who expressed his interest in my proposition and cautioned me not to deal through any third party but advised me to write directly to the Foreign Office upon my arrival at Moscow and that the Russian Consul at Warsaw gave me an extension of 30 days when I discovered that the term of my visum had already expired, charging only one half of the usual charge because as he said my original visum was a diplomatic visum. So I have perfect right to enter Russia and remain therein for a month”. He replied quietly, “the Foreign Office knows you and your purpose and there is nothing wrong about the visum which was issued by mistake. The situation is such that they have to request you to leave.” Then I asked him, “Is there anything which I did after the issuing of the visum that justifies your decision?” He said, “There is nothing against you personally or otherwise. If there is anything against you the Government would order the military officers to marshall you out of the country. But that is not the case and they send me as their official representative to express their regret over the situation and to apologize for the issuing of visum at this time.” Then I smiled and said, “I think I know what is behind it all, I came to find out the true attitude of your Foreign Office and as I have learned it now I have no desire to stay here for another day.” I held out my letter and asked him to take it to the proper authority. He took it and said, “I will do so but that does not alter the message which I have delivered to you.” I said he needed not worry about that. He went out, bowing politely, with the letter in his pocket.

Miss Tobinon said to me, “You should speak to your friends and asked them to help you out. You have the visum and I don’t see how they can keep you out.” I told her that

“no friends can help the matter since it was the fear of Japan that actuated them to keep me out of their country and they have gone so far as to admit their mistake and officially apologized to me. This being the situation I do not wish to waste any more of my time.”

Then I wired Honolulu of my presence in Moscow which I had so far refrained from doing for fear it might get the Japanese to head me off.

After wiring Honolulu I went to the Chinese Legation. A young man, Yen, W.W. Yen’s nephew asked me to come in and said Wu Nan-ju (吳南州) the Minister and K.S. Weigh, 魏良聲 the Charge D’Affairs, were out but would return soon. At about 8 p.m. they returned and I gave them Dr. Taung’s letter and told them briefly what had happened during the day and that I thought I would meet them before leaving. They all expressed their sincere sympathy and asked what they could do for me etc. I told them that they could not do anything to help me as the Sino-Russian relation was very much strained on account of the East China railroad at that time. They said the Japanese Railroads Commission headed by Matsuyama was in Moscow negotiating the purchase of the East China railroad and China strenuously objected to the Russian right to sell that railroad. It is clear that the Japanese kept the track of me and upon my arrival at Moscow they brought pressure to bear on the Russian Government which was nervously trying to avoid any friction or cause of provocation with Japan. At the first flush I thought I would make the whole affair public and create sensation for news story but a better judgment prevailed and I decided to keep it to myself so that in course of time we may make use of it to our advantage.

The Chinese urged me to take dinner with them and I sat with Wu, Weigh and their wives while others were eating at (the) other table. After dinner we had a long talk with Wu, who said he would like to do anything he could to help me out but his intervention will avail nothing, while it will surely aggravate the Russians which may not be the wise thing to do. I told him that I would not have him say anything about the affair either to the Russians or anyone else. Then I bade them goodbye and returned to the hotel.

## July 20

In the morning I went to the Intourist Bureau to buy the R.R. ticket and to see about visum etc. When I returned to the hotel it was about 2 p.m. Miss Tobinson said the F.O. representative was looking for me again and she will call him up. After lunch I was in the hotel lobby and she came to me with the man, conducting us to the manager's private office. When they closed the door and sat down he produced from his pocket the letter which I had asked him to transmit to the F.O. and said, "The F.O. is sorry that they cannot receive this letter." I took it back and asked him to write his name on the envelope which he did. Then I made Miss Tobinson to write her name also. His name is Fligeltane, representative of the F.O. I told him through Miss Tobinson that "I want you to inform your F.O. that I am leaving your country with no unpleasant feeling of any kind and that I am rather appreciative of the manner in which they expressed themselves to me. As I understand you to say that there is nothing against me but that their situation was such that they could not receive me at present. Their official expression of regret and apology is rather satisfactory to me." As I said it, I rose and they all got up also. The man bowed and I came out as he was going out the other way.

At 11 p.m. July 20, I left Moscow by a third class coach on the Manchurian train which came as far as Negoreloje, the Russo-Polish frontier and all passengers changed train. It was very interesting to notice that at the frontier there was a plot of land fenced off with barbed wire which is known as neutral zone. On either side of the neutral ground military barracks with armed soldiers guarding the frontier. When the train stopped, a soldier with bayonet running along the train from one end to the other trying to see if there was anyone hidden under the cars. Another soldier in the barracks was seen standing with field glasses to inspect the train.

After spending an hour and half on the Russian frontier for passport and baggage inspection, the train with passengers on drew over to the other side of the boundary only to be examined again by the officers of the other country.

All along the railway line, the Polish farm houses mostly of thatch roofs look poorer

than those in Austria and Hungary, those in Russia being the poorest.

In Moscow streets, no taxi could be hired, only the shabby looking carriages were seen waiting for chance passengers for service. An American whom I met on the train told me that he had actually seen people dying of hunger in the street. Some said Russia is improving but some said the contrary.

## July 21

At 11:30 p.m. I reached Warsaw and went to the same hotel Polonia.

## July 22

At 7:30 a.m. I left Warsaw by a third class train which was passing through Poland and Zchecoslovakia reached Vienna at 8:30 p.m. At first I thought of stopping at Hotel Kummer where a good night's rest would do me much good and of calling up Mr. Taung who would be glad to hear of my trip to Moscow. I thought also to make a trip to Prague, the capital city of Zchecoslovakia, there to see Premier Benes to whom Mr. Taung had given me a letter of introduction and through whom I might have a chance to see President Masarick.<sup>334</sup> But all that would require a considerable sum of money which might run short on the way back. So I decided to go to a small inexpensive hotel outside the city where I could take a good rest at less expense. It was the well known Hot Spring resort known as Bad Vöslau Hotel.

## July 24

At 3:30 p.m. I left Bad Vöslau and reached St. Pölten. I spent the night at the Pittner Hotel.

<sup>334</sup> Tomáš (Thomas) Garrigue Masaryk (1850–1937) was a Czech independence leader and president of Czechoslovakia, 1918–35. Rhee and Masaryk had a mutual friend in Herbert A. Miller.

### July 25

At 7:45 a.m. I departed and arrived at Zurich at 10:30 p.m. At the railway station Han ho Rhi, his wife, Annie, and Annie's sister Molly met me and brought me to Hotel Regina. The train from Vienna to Zurich passed through a most beautiful section of those countries and especially the country from Salzburg to Zurich is really wonderful. All along the River Inn, through the valleys between the Austrian Alps, many old castles, villages of farmers as well as large industrial towns such as Innsbruck and Salzburg make the long journey entirely enjoyable.

### July 26

In the morning I went to the American Express to engage passage for N.Y. Accidentally I inquired if there was any mail for "Mr. Rhee." They handed me a telegram from Honolulu dated July 6 informing the death of Kim Sung Ki and the foreclosure proceedings filed against Dongji Investment Co.<sup>335</sup> The news of the death of Rev. Kim was a shocking blow to me for he was the most faithful and loyal friend through all these years of stormy experiences among the Koreans in Hawaii. Of course the foreclosure proceedings also meant a disaster to me.

For four days I had a complete rest, having a room at Hotel Regina and eating at Han ho Rhi's. Han ho and his family did everything they could to make me feel comfortable.

### July 29

Saturday afternoon. The Rhis and Mullers planned an auto trip to Luzern for me. As we drove along the Lake Zug and several other lakes, I enjoyed the country scene immensely. There was an annual display of fireworks in Luzern that night and thousands of spectators gathered along the beautiful lake Reuss.<sup>336</sup> The most interesting thing was the

<sup>335</sup>) On the failure of the Dongji Investment Company, see Lew, *The Making of the First Korean President*, 172-77.

<sup>336</sup>) Probably Lake Lucerne, which is drained by the Reuss River.

Kapellbrücke, which is an old wooden bridge with a wooden corridor over it, connected with a large stone tower standing in the lake, which used to serve as a prison. The river running through the lake Reuss is the Reuss river which empties into the Rhine. We took tea in a round room, the walls of which were decorated with the painting of historical legends in connection with the Suisse Confederation. After tea we drove up to the cable car station and by a cable route we went up to the mountain where we watched the fireworks with many others. As the fireworks began it began to rain so heavily that the pyrotechnic display had to be abandoned and the people dispersed. Their first plan was to stay there overnight and to drive around many interesting places the following day Sunday. The rain interfered and we returned to Zurich that night. We made about one hundred miles that day.

### July 30

Sunday afternoon they took me out to the country again and visited a large castle, Schloss Hallwyl and stopped at the Schloss Brestenburg Hotel where we took tea and where the Rhis took [a] swim in the lake.

In the evening when we returned to Zurich, we had made about 150 miles by auto that afternoon. They entertained me at a large Hungarian restaurant to a dinner as a farewell reception.

### July 31

At 7:45 a.m. I left Zurich for Milan. The Rhis and Mrs. Muller came to the station to see me off and they were crying as they waved at the train which slowly pulled out. I felt deeply touched at the parting.

The train ran zig-zag through the beautiful mountain regions with lakes of blue water and mountain peaks white with snow. The tunnel through Gotthard Mountain is known as the longest in Switzerland. Near Lugano, two American girls working in the State Department with diplomatic passports got on the train and the custom inspector exempted

their baggage including mine.

At 1:30 p.m. I arrived at Milan, Italy. As previously arranged through the Tourist Bureau I went to Hotel Metropole which is located in a busy centre near the famous Milan Dome. At 3 p.m. with the three Suisse tourists who happened to travel on the same train, went out on an auto tour and saw the Dome, other churches and the cemetery.

The churches in Milan and Rome prohibit woman from entering them with bare arms. One lady had to stay out while another borrowed her husband's coat to cover up her arms. In the next room the priest tried to keep the husband out because he was without coat. He explained and was permitted to enter. The Tourist Bureau keeps black jackets for ladies to rent.

#### August 1

At 7:40 a.m. I left Milan again with the three Suisse tourists and arrived at Florence at 1:48 p.m. The 2nd class trains in Italy are as crowded as the 3rd class trains in Switzerland. The first half of the journey was made through mountains, valleys, and tunnels along the river Arno. The last half was through a level country, mostly covered with vineyards, the vines creeping on the trees planted in regular rows.

At 1:48 p.m. we came to Florence and stopped at Hotel Helvetia Room 15, as previously arranged by the Tourist Bureau. Being under Suisse management, the hotel is much cleaner and nicer than the Hotel Metropole in Milan. The town is situated on the Arno and is much more interesting and the churches and other buildings appearing to be more antiquated than many others I had seen so far.

#### August 2

At 2 p.m. I left Florence, the three Suisse people remaining in Florence for a couple of days longer. In the train met F. Donner who was also going to Rome.<sup>337)</sup>

<sup>337)</sup> This sentence appears in Daybook 7 but was struck out of the typescript.

At 7:15 p.m. I arrived in Rome. The country along the way is mostly level with some mountain rising here and there at a distance, which are comparatively low and barren. At Rome the Hotel Helvetia had been engaged by the Tourist Bureau.

#### August 3

With many tourists I went out on the sight-seeing bus. The places visited are:

The Vatican

The Vatican State is 44 acres surrounded by old walls and inhabited by 664 persons mostly employed in the Vatican and 300 Suisse Guards.

St. John's Basilica

It was and still is the main church because it used to be the Pope's official residence. During Napoleon's regime the Pope returned from Avignon, France, built the Vatican and lived therein. Next to the church is the Pope's private chapel with "Scala Santa", Holy Stairs. We saw many people kissing the plate and walking up the stairs on their knees.

St. Peter's Cathedral, the most wonderful of them all. The Raphael Rooms, Sistine Chapel, Tapestry Gallery, Museum and St. Paul's Church.

The Baptistry, where Constantine the Great was baptized. The old bronze door squeaks and makes musical sounds.

The Church of St. Maria Maggiore founded by Tibereus<sup>338)</sup> in 352 A.D. The ceiling was made of the gold known as the "first gold from America."

The Palace of Lateran where the treaty of reconciliation between the Italian Govern-

<sup>338)</sup> Actually Pope Liberius.

ment and the Vatican was signed.

Via Appia, the ancient Appian Road—built by Appius Claudius 312 B.C. said to be the oldest road in existence.

The ancient walls, with 20 gates in all directions which gave rise to the saying, “All roads lead to Rome.”

#### August 4

Pantheon. It was originally a pagan temple built 30 years B.C. with a large sky-light in the dome which is 9 meters in diameter. During the reign of Constantine II the temple was converted into a Christian Church. Recently the king of Italy made this a royal burial place.

The Temple of Neptune; the Roman Forum, Trojan Forum, Imperial Forum, and Republican Forum which are being excavated. The earthquakes destroyed them and the Romans built new city on their ruins. About 30 years ago the Italian Government began the excavation work and the restoration of the buried city is largely due to Mussolini, said they.

Arch of Titus and Colosseum. The Colosseum was completed by Titus 80 years A.D. The amphitheatre with 50,000 seats.

Arch of Severus—erected by the order of Emperor Severus and his two sons. (A picture taken in front of it) The stones from a ruined part of Colosseum—built five big palaces.

#### August 5

Gianicolo Hill—a panoramic view of Rome, with the mountains of Apennine and Alban surrounding the city at a distance and the River Tiber running through it. There is a small island on the river called the Tiberine Island.

On the hill stands the equestrian statue of Garibaldi looking towards the Vatican which he regarded as his enemy.

San Pietro in Montorio Church, built on the spot where Peter was martyred by Nero, they say. In the center of the little round temple Bramante, gold sand is shown. The legend says the cross on which Peter was crucified stands there.

Pyramid of Cestius—said to be built 1200 B.C. brought from Egypt and Cestius, a Roman, was buried in it 30 A.D.<sup>339)</sup>

In the evening we visited the Fascist Exposition. It shows the progress and improvements made since the inauguration of the Fascist regime.

Catacombs of St. Callixtus.

#### August 6

At 9 a.m. I left Rome and arrived at Pisa at 1:30 p.m. (F. Donner who came from Rome on the same train left for Florence and)<sup>340)</sup> I went on to Genoa. As the train was pulling out of the station I saw at a distance not far the famous leaning tower. The country from Rome to Pisa is mostly level and uninteresting and the roads are dry and dusty. From Pisa to Genoa about two-thirds of the trip is made through tunnels, as the railroad tracks are laid between the ranges of the Apennine mountains which run along the southwestern coast of Italy and the sea. They say that the automobile highway all the way along is wonderful but on the train one can hardly see the beautiful scenery as it goes through many long tunnels. What little one could see between the tunnels reveals the beach resorts with many towns and villages crowded with gay tourists swimming and sun-bathing along the beach.

Characteristic of Italy, many mountain tops, far and near, are crowned with old castles and villages, some of which appear to be little towns, surrounded by old city walls. From Ventimiglia, the French frontier, the sea shore places are even more picturesque and modern. Such places as Menton, Monte-Carlo and Nice are located on the coast one after another, the last named being known as the queen of all the French riviera towns.

339) Rhee placed a question mark after this sentence in Daybook 7, perhaps indicating incredulity.

340) The text in angle brackets appears in Daybook 7 but was struck out of the typescript.

At 4:58 p.m. I arrived at Genoa and went to Hotel Argentina Princes, Room 111, as previously booked. It was so hot and dusty that I did not feel like doing any sightseeing. After supper I took bath and went to bed.

### August 7

In the morning I went out on the auto sightseeing bus with two other tourists. The Church of Annunciation, said to be the richest in the world, the ceiling and wall decorations being of solid gold, completed in 1650.

The Cathedral of St. Lorenzo, where the ashes of John the Baptist brought from Mira in 1097 still rests there.

The House of Columbus in the "oldest district" in which Columbus lived in 1451.

The Regina Alena Tunnel which is like the one in Los Angeles.

The War Memorial Arch, said to be the most beautiful public square in Italy.

The Cemetery—the most elaborate cemetery I ever saw. A set of pictures bought at the cemetery entrance will show some of the interesting statues and tombs.

In the afternoon, Aug. <sup>6<sup>341</sup></sup>, I went out with a German speaking Swiss young man who was living in the same hotel with me.

Although we do not understand each other's language, we had agreed to do the sight-seeing together. First we went to the Funiculare station, longest cable car line I had seen and took a ride up to the Righi hotel which perched on the Apennine hill. The panorama view of Genoa, the city, the harbor and the sea spread before the hotel porch where we took tea. The other side of the hill is a deep valley in which the cemetery is located and all around the valley the ranges of the Apennine mountains with high peaks here and there standing out showing the old fortresses atop, which are now deserted.

When we came down from Righi, we walked up to the little park where we saw a lot of birds, ducks, etc. The streets of the town are so narrow and crooked that my Swiss

<sup>341</sup>) Rhee likely meant August 7.

companion at first refused to follow me but I insisted and when we at last came to the main street he was glad to be out of the alley.

After supper, we went out again. He, my Swiss companion, said to me through the hotel clerk that he would show me real old streets in Genoa. I followed him and soon we came to a narrow, crooked street paved with cobble stones. The streets are dark and crowded with people and, at first, I felt quite unsafe. However, I soon dismissed my fear when I saw many policemen walking among the crowds. The eaves of the old, tall building almost meet together over the street.

Later in the evening we went to a coffee house called Varieta. By the sign, I took it for a variety show but when we went in I knew it was one of those popular coffee houses where bare-legged girls come out and dance every once in a while as a course of entertainment. As we sat down and ordered cold drinks, girls began to gather around us and tried to talk to me. One of them, sitting at the next table, talked to me in Japanese and English, saying she wants to come and sit with us. As we paid no attention to them the proprietor came and stopped them.

### August 8

At 10:15 a.m. I left Genoa for Nice. When the train pulled into the Ventimiglio station, the French frontier, the weather was sultry and the station was crowded with a bunch of young Italians who blocked up the narrow entrance at the customs office where the passports are being examined. The French customs inspector told me that U.S. passports have to be visaed every time of re-entry. He told me to go to the French Consulate which is not far from the station and get the visa and take the next train which is due about an hour later. I went to the Consulate but the Consul was out for lunch. I waited and when he came in the vice-consul took my passport and read it with the Consul. They seemed to be very much interested to know that I am a Korean and refused to take Japanese passport and that an American passport was given me while I am not a citizen. They spoke very courteously to me, saying that the passport requirements cause so much in-

convenience and that the diplomatic visa which they are issuing will permit me to stay in France a month, or longer if I so desire. I thanked them and came to the Railway station. A customs officer under the consul's instruction waited for me and ordered a porter to take my luggage to the train without opening them for inspection, which means a diplomatic exemption.

The 3:30 p.m. train took me to Nice where I landed at 4:30 p.m. and met George Whang<sup>342)</sup> to whom I had sent a telegram from Genoa. He took charge of my baggage and conducted me to Hotel Luxembourg, one of the large hotels on the seaside, to take room 57, a large front room with the windows opening to the sea. For the following two days of my stay there, he and Chung Suk Hai<sup>343)</sup> paid all my expenses.

#### August 9

Whang and I went to the main office of the Italian S.S. Line and found no mail. We could not trace up my trunk which Rhi Han ho promised to send to the steamer from Zurich. So we went to Vile<sup>344)</sup> Nice and found several letters in the post office but nothing was said about the trunk in Rhi Han ho's letter. We telegraphed to Zurich and in the evening we learned that the trunk had been taken up to the steamer Rex at Genoa.

In the afternoon George took me to Monaco, a separate, independent state, the main revenue of which comes from gambling. It is a beautiful little place with castles and the King's residence on the hill top and the big casino and gardens on the shore. The casino is a large, palatial hall where gamblers from all countries, mostly Americans they told me, continue their "business" almost day and night. George bought the admission tickets, 10 francs each, and we went in. Those halls were filled with all sorts of gambling establishments, everywhere crowded with men and women of all ages. They would not allow us

342) "황진난" in Daybook 7.

343) Chung (정석해 1899-1996), a former member of the Seoul YMCA and a participant in the March First Movement. He lived in France, 1920-39.

344) Rhee probably meant "Ville."

to enter some of the inner rooms where special high-priced tickets are required.

In the evening, Chung invited me to dinner and the "Variety" show.

[End of Daybook 7]<sup>345)</sup>

#### August 10

At 10:30 a.m. I went to Villefranche by bus and embarked the Italian Liner Rex at 3:30 p.m.

#### August 11

At 5:30 p.m. I stopped at Gibraltar for a while and sailed out to the Atlantic. The general outlook of the fort and the mountain ranges forming the background of Gibraltar look quite similar to the Diamond Head in Hawaii though it is not as beautiful and large. The relative speed of the Rex was seen when she caught up and passed several large steamers sailing in the same direction.

#### August 16

At 4 a.m. we passed the Ambrose Lighthouse and docked in N.Y. harbor at 9 a.m. With the 1,118 passengers aboard, she broke all the speed records by making the voyage of 3,210 miles from Gibraltar in 4 days, 15 hours, and 30 minutes, thus Italy wresting the speed honors of the Atlantic from Germany.

Choi Yong Chin met me at the pier and later about 12 Koreans were waiting at the entrance to welcome me. Before landing I was told to wait among the foreign passengers until the citizens get through with their inspection. Later one of the inspectors came and asked me to show my passport. As I produced it, he said I did not have to wait for

345) Rhee wrote "(See the other book)" at the bottom of the page. The typescript continues through 1934, but the original daybooks for this period are no longer extant. See introduction for further explanation.

the citizens to get through first. He led me to the Captain of the inspectors and told him something, handing him my passport. The captain or chief inspector said to me, "Sorry you had to wait, but if you do not tell us who you are, how can we tell?" He asked me to sign my name as chairman of the Korean Commission at Washington and offered me a large book on his desk. Then he instructed one of the uniformed men to lead me to the Customs inspector stationed on the dock at the entrance of the gangplank. He led me through the crowd down to the shore giving the S.S. officers no chance to collect the S.S. ticket from me. He introduced me to the customs officer who asked me to <sign> in his book my name and title as I had done at the immigration inspector's. They told an inspector to pass my baggage without the usual examination. We looked all around but my baggage was not brought down to the shore and we had to wait. When I gathered them up together the officer stamped them without opening. It was a full diplomatic courtesy extended to me by the U.S. Government. This is a distinct mark of change of sentiment towards Japan. The friends waiting all this time at the dock entrance brought me to Hotel Pa. by taxi, room no. 1185.

#### August 18

In the afternoon I left Hotel Pa., Choi Yong Chin, Namkoong Yum (David) and his boy June all coming with me on a taxi and stopped at Hotel Marseille on 103 St. and Broadway. The room no. is 320.

#### August 19

Saturday evening all Korean Societies in N.Y. invited me to a reception given in my honor at the Korean Church and Institute. Ko Chai Won presided over the meeting. Chang Duk Soo<sup>346</sup> made the welcome speech. I addressed the audience, telling them

346) Chang (장덕수, Chang Ducksoo, 1895 – 1947), a Ph.D. candidate at Columbia University and later founder of the Korean Democratic Party (1945).

about my impressions in European countries I visited, diplomatic experiences in Geneva and elsewhere and the plans which I would endeavor to follow.

#### August 20

In the afternoon, the Chinese leaders of <중화공소(中華公所)><sup>347</sup> in N.Y. entertained me at a dinner in one of the Chinese restaurants near Chinatown. Among those present at the dinner were K.C. Wu, <吳乾初, 梁鹿元, 陳樹棠><sup>348</sup>, Bert V. Entemey, Check Shan Lee <李卓山>, George Chintong, each representing a separate organization as its executive officer.

#### August 26

Sunday, a meeting was held at the Kuo Min Tang<sup>349</sup> Bldg. They had advertised this meeting in the <民氣日報><sup>350</sup> twice, together with a long article introducing me as a speaker at this meeting, commenting on my cooperation with the Chinese delegates at Geneva and informing on the previous meeting at the <中華公所><sup>351</sup> etc. They had sent me a formal invitation signed by <趙鼎榮> and <司徒一平><sup>352</sup> as Kuomintang <美東地部執行委員> etc. At the meeting they demonstrated a cordial, friendly spirit. <南宮炎> and <張德秀><sup>353</sup> were with me. After the tea and Chinese cakes were served, they asked me to speak. I told them of the diplomatic victory won by the Chinese delegates at Geneva, the happy cooperation given me by the Chinese representatives at Geneva and elsewhere and the necessity of publicity work in America in order to counteract the Japanese propaganda influence. After the meeting they requested me to stay over Wednesday

347) The Chinese Consolidated Benevolent Association was founded in the late 19th century to provide assistance to Chinese populations in major North American cities.

348) Wu Qianchu, Liang Luyuan, Chen Shutang.

349) The Kuomintang, or the Chinese Nationalist Party, was the ruling party in China, 1928–49.

350) The *Chinese Nationalist Daily* was a paper published by Kuomintang supporters in New York City.

351) The Chinese Consolidated Benevolent Association.

352) Zhao Dingrong and Situ Yiping.

353) David Namkoong and Jang Deok-su.

evening when they will talk things over to see what can be done to produce the desired result and I consented to stay in N.Y. instead of starting on my tour to California the following day as had originally planned for. The Far Eastern Magazine project, with the financial support of the Chinese in America, started here at this time.

In the evening, the Korean friends in New York led by Chang Duk Soo invited me to a dinner given in my honor at an uptown Chinese restaurant.

### August 30

The Chinese dinner was given at the Chinese Kuomintang bldg. It was a big Chinese dinner and many Chinese local leaders were present. No definite result was obtained except the letters of recommendation which they promised to send out to all their branch societies in the western and mid-west city informing them of my western tour and urging them to entertain me whenever they find an opportunity to do so.

### August 31

A dinner was given me at the Kimberland new apartment 548 Riverside Drive.

### September 1

At 9:30 a.m. I left New York with Chang Kee Young by Safe Way Bus line for Chicago. David Namkoong, Tom Woo, Choi Young Chin and Paik Nam Yong came to the station to see us off.

At 10:30 p.m. we reached Pittsburgh. Chang had a quarrel with a Pittsburgh police who made himself a sorry figure before the crowd and suddenly disappeared. The bus traveling via Easton, Pa. along the Lehigh hills and the Susquehanna and Ohio rivers made the trip interesting and untiring up to the city of Pittsburgh. From Pittsburgh to Chicago is largely a plain farm land. The moonlight in the vast open country kept me awake nearly all night.

### September 2

At 12 o'clock Chicago Standard Time, we reached Chicago where Honkey Kim and Hansu Oh, as committeemen appointed by the Chicago Dongji<sup>354</sup> to meet me, were at the bus station with Oh's large car.

After lunch they tried to secure a room for me but it seemed almost impossible to get any accommodation in the city on account of the 500,000 extra visitors to the World's Fair filled all the city hotels to capacity, being Labor Day. That was the time when the Fair had biggest crowds. After much telephoning a room was secured at the Y.M.C.A. hotel where I registered for room 14054. In the afternoon, we went to the Century Progress Fair and visited a number of interesting expositions. Mr. T.E. Jung <took> us around with Nam Chung Heun. Unexpectedly we came across a number of friends in the Fair who showed me the Jade Pagoda, the Belgian Village, the Science Bldg. etc.

### September 3

Sunday evening, all the local Dongji members held a welcome reception at Jung and Co. 2321 Indiana Ave. and I spoke of my trip to Geneva. They proposed to call a large reception at which all Korean Societies in the city will be invited but I asked them to postpone it until I return from the West. That evening they raised among themselves a sum of \$100 for my travelling expense. The next day I bought a second-hand car Willys<sup>355</sup>, for \$200 with the \$100 given me as down payment.

### September 5

We were entertained at a dinner in T.E. Jung's house, with Mr. and Mrs. Hansu Oh, Messrs. Honkey Kim and others. In the evening we all went to the Fair to see the illumination. We walked all the way down to the 22nd St. entrance.

354) The Chicago branch of the Dongji-hoe.

355) A defunct American automobile company.

### September 6

At 3:30 p.m. we left Chicago for Milwaukee, Wisconsin, on our second-hand Willys coupe, I driving and Chang guiding the route with maps. The mileage register was at 19,835 mile mark or thereabouts when leaving Chicago. At 7 p.m. we arrived in Milwaukee and went to C.C. Joe's restaurant, Oriental Food Products Co. 3909 Vliet St. After dinner at their home Young Mah, Joe's brother-in-law from Honolulu, took me in his car to the Grand Hotel Schroeder, "the best hotel" in the city where President Roosevelt<sup>356</sup> had stopped, and reserved the room for me.

### September 7

At 10 a.m. we left Milwaukee. Before leaving the city, a motorcycle cop followed us and stopped our car, saying that I was driving in the city at a speed rate of 50 miles an hour. Chang said we were driving over 40 miles an hour and I said we were in a hurry to reach Denver as soon as possible. The police took out a note book from his pocket and started to question. "Where are you living?" he said. "Washington, D.C." I replied. "What are you doing there?" he continued. I said, "We are on diplomatic service." "On the U.S. diplomatic service?" he asked. I said, "Korean Commission." He turned around and with a changed tone, said, "You are the first Korean I ever met." He talked a while, showing to us how to avoid the crowded city streets by following certain street numbers etc. "If you drive through the city, you may run over some people which will not be much fun. Be a little careful and have a good time. Goodbye", saying this, he went back.

At 7 p.m. we stopped at a family house with "Tourist Rooms" sign in front just outside the city of Cedar Rapids, Iowa.

<sup>356</sup>) Probably a reference to President Theodore Roosevelt's 1912 trip to Milwaukee during which he famously survived an assassination attempt.

### September 8

At 5 a.m. we started out again and about noon crossed at Clinton, Iowa the < tall > bridge across the Mississippi River<sup>357</sup>. The Lincoln Highway in Nebraska was good in some places but very bad in others. In the so-called gravel road about 15 miles before reaching Kearney, the loose sandpiles on a detour road were struck and the car skidded and ran into the deep side-ditch. Fortunately the both banks of the ditch were soft sands with no stone or solid dirt to bump against. The front axle of the car was little bent but no injury or damage of any kind resulted. A large truck passing by pulled out my car and I started the engine and drove to Kearney. At 8:30 p.m. I reached Kearney, Nebraska and stopped at a private house leaving the car in a garage to straighten out the axle and fenders.

### September 9

At 8:45 a.m. we left Kearney and reached Cheyenne, Wyoming at about dark. We filled up our tank at Cheyenne and started out for Denver which is about 75 or 80 miles. It was pitch dark and began to rain. Three days previous to that, there was one of the heaviest storms in Denver, a portion of that city being under water. The road seemed narrow and crooked, my headlight was dim, the night pitch dark and it rained cat and dog. I was very careful and drove not more than 20 or 30 miles an hour. However, we were determined to make Denver that night for that will save us one day in our efforts to reach Butte, Montana as soon as possible. All of a sudden we plunged into a stream or pool from which sheets of water covered the car as if heaven and earth were tumbling down together. However, the car soon emerged from it and passed the pool of water unscathed. That settled the question for us. I said we will stop over at the first village we hit. Finally we came to a small village, Nuam<sup>358</sup>, Colorado, where we found an unnamed

<sup>357</sup>) A discrepancy exists in Rhee's account of 7-8 September. If Rhee stopped "just outside the city" of Cedar Rapids, Iowa, on 7 September, he would have already crossed the Mississippi River. Cedar Rapids is west of Clinton, Iowa, on the Lincoln Highway.

<sup>358</sup>) Probably Nunn, Colorado, a rural community on U.S. Highway 85 between Denver and Cheyenne, Wyoming.

“hotel” which did not appear very inviting. Since there was no other place to go, we stopped there. The old landlady fixed up some ham and eggs for us for dinner. While eating the old folk told the story of a family in California who bought a brand new car, new dresses, etc. for a trip to N.Y. They happened to be there in the night of the terrible storm three nights before. Their car turned turtle at that pool where we passed under the sheet of water that night and rolled down the hill where it finally landed without any damage but it [was] full of water.

So this party, the old lady said, came to that hotel and stayed until they got everything well dried.

#### September 10

At 6:30 a.m. we left Nuam, Colo. and reached Denver. Stopped at Hotel Argonaut, near the Capitol building and Hotel Wellington. The Bickmores and their relatives entertained us at dinners and lunches at their hotel, the Country Club and University Club. The Denver Post interviewed me and my picture and a long article appeared<sup>359</sup>. The reporter said she saw my name in the hotel registration but I am sure some of the friends must have informed the editor. Dr. Cherrington<sup>360</sup>, professor in Denver University, called at my hotel and we had a long talk on the Far Eastern situation.

#### September 12

At 8 a.m. we, Chang Kee Young and I, left Denver on the way to Butte, Montana. At Fort Collins, Colorado, we stopped to see the Whitakers and another couple, both are

359) Frances Wayne, “President of Korea Says Japs Attempt to Cripple America”, *The Denver Post*, 12 September 1933.

360) Ben Mark Cherrington (1885 – 1980) was a professor of international relations and chancellor of the University of Denver, 1943 – 46. Cherrington helped to organize the State Department’s Division of Cultural Relations. He co-authored the Charter of the United Nations and co-founded the United Nations Educational, Scientific and Cultural Organization (UNESCO). Cherrington was born in Gibbon, Nebraska, thirteen miles from Kearney, the hometown of Henry Chung, and forty miles from Hastings, the location Korean Youth Military Academy; he may have been acquainted with the Korean cause through these men’s efforts. Cherrington also served as a YMCA secretary in California and Colorado in the 1910s and 1920s.

cousins of Miss Thankful Bickmore. The Whitakers used to live in Honolulu. The friends in Denver advised us to go into Yellowstone Park by the east entrance, saying the driveway between Collins and the park is beautiful. We did not tell them but we could not do it because we had no money for gasoline, after paying for the auto repair at Denver. So we were trying to reach Butte by the shortest route we could find. We drove all day but the roads were rough and bridges were very narrow and we could not go any further, beginning to feel sleepy. Of course, we did not have three square meals a day since leaving Denver. At 12:45 a.m. we reached a small town, Buffalo, Wyoming, and stopped at a small house with Tourist Inn sign in front. An old lady came out and agreed, after parley, to give us a room for \$1 for the two of us. So we two slept in one bed.

#### September 13

At 6:30 a.m. we left Buffalo. We came to a town where I went into a small restaurant for something to eat. Chang excused himself and went out with his kodak. After a while, he came back with his camera, and said, smiling, that now we can buy gasoline enough to take us to Butte. Upon inquiry, he explained, saying, that he went to a jewelery store and asked the manager to buy his kodak or hold it as a security for a loan of few dollars with which he can buy gasoline enough to take us to Butte. He said he had further explained that we had an auto trouble, which is true, and the repair cost us an unexpected expense, etc. The jeweler, a perfect stranger, handed him \$2. We both laughed heartily and felt much relieved and cheered. Indeed, that loan of two dollars pulled us <out> and we paid it back when we reached Los Angeles. Chang wrote the jeweler expressing our deep gratitude. Each time we recall this experience, we feel much grateful and appreciative and will remember it for a long time.

### September 13<sup>361)</sup>

At 9:10 p.m. we arrived at Butte, Montana. As we were travelling in the dark through high mountain pass, we were cheered when we saw the city of Butte with its thousands of lights spread before us at a distance. It was too late at night to meet any friend and we went to Hotel Butte.

### September 14

In the morning Dr. Wilson Hong came to see us. During our stay in Butte, he and his wife took us to Ramsay and Whitehall, [Montana,] visiting ten or eleven Korean families some of whom are living about 40 miles from Butte. The children of the eleven families are sixty and some of them are as old as 18 or 19 years of age. One evening one of the local newspapers sent a reporter to interview and a story appeared of my visit and the Korean Movement, etc.<sup>362)</sup>

On the 16th, Saturday, they held a meeting to welcome me at the Chinese Church at 2:30 p.m. at which time I told them of my trip to Europe and of the great opportunity ahead of us etc. At the meeting they raised about \$200 for our traveling expenses and also pledged their support of the Korean Commission. A family or two expressed their regret that they were given no chance to entertain us and urged us to stay a little longer.

While we were there it snowed a little. They said on Aug. 20 this year, they had six inches <of> snow there.

### September 17

Sunday at 8:30 a.m. we started out, Hong and wife in their car guiding us to Whitehall and <윤성규><sup>363)</sup> also came there on his. At 8:45 p.m. we reached West Yellowstone Park and entered the National Park. In the Park we drove around nearly 150 miles, stopping

361) The typescript contains two entries for 13 September. Both entries have been printed here.

362) "Man without a Country is Visitor in Butte", [Butte] *Montana Standard*, 16 September 1933.

363) Yun Seong-gyu.

at the Old Faithful and other geysers, hot springs, boiling wells, etc. In many places, especially along the Grand Canyon, the road is narrow and crooked and I had to drive very carefully. This led me to say jokingly when friends later asked us how we enjoyed the scenery etc. that "Chang saw the park and I saw the road."

### September 17<sup>364)</sup>

At 8:45 p.m. we returned to W. Yellowstone and stayed overnight at Hotel Madison.

### September 18

At 6:40 a.m. we left W. Yellowstone Park and at 10:50 p.m. we reached Salt Lake City, Utah. We stopped at Hotel Perry.

### September 19

At 7:20 a.m. I left Salt Lake City and came to Las Vegas, Nevada, which is known as "a wide open city." Hotel Grand gave us a couple of rooms. With the exception of Chicago and Denver, we insisted on paying no more than \$1 for a room and all these hotels took us in for that price. \$2 for us. This little town is located in that vast Nevada desert and it did appear like oasis. Nearly every house on the city streets is a club of some kind, signified by large sign boards which are illuminated at night. These clubs are what we call in the East nothing but gambling joints. We visited three of these places.

### September 20

At 7:25 a.m. we left Las Vegas and passing through San Bernardino, Cal. arrived in Los Angeles at 4:10 p.m. Our friends took us to Hotel New Rosslyn where we stayed a whole week. Kim Soon Kwon, Kim Chong Lim and many others devoted a good deal of their time to the entertaining of us.

364) The typescript contains two entries for 17 September. Both entries have been reproduced here.

## September 21

At <전진영>'s<sup>365</sup> house we had <동지임원>'s<sup>366</sup> meeting at which I told them of the trip to Europe etc.

They said the Chinese head learned from N. Y. of my coming and expected to welcome me at their meeting. Through Soonkee Lee, the Chinese vice-consul, Yi-seng S. Kiang and the President of the Chinese Chamber of Commerce, invited me to a special Chinese dinner. Soonkee Lee and Kee Young Chang accompanied me. The Chinese had already arranged a dinner party and mass meeting to be held Sunday evening to welcome me and I asked them to cancel it as I had already promised to be at the Korean dinner and meeting that evening. Then they asked me if I could stay for another week, for Sunday evening is the best time for such gatherings. I told them that I was planning to visit Los Angeles again and that I had to hurry back to New York to sign certain legal papers. In fact, a wireless message came from Honolulu the day before urging me to go back to New York as soon as possible and sign the depositions in connection with the Korean Christian Church trial in Cristy's Court against <이용직><sup>367</sup> and his faction. They mortgaged the Church property which we were trying to sell for \$17,500 in 1929. So I told the Chinese that I could not stay another week in Los Angeles.

During our stay, the Chinese Consul informed the Los Angeles Times of my visit in the city and the editor sent the staff correspondent, Claren W. Martin, with a photographer to the New Rosslyn Hotel and took my flashlight picture and interviewed me. The picture and an article came out in the paper <the> following morning.<sup>368</sup> Martin requested me to send him some of our literature as he wants to write a feature syndicate article for Sunday edition.

365) Jeon Jin-yeong.

366) Officers of the Dongji-hoe.

367) Lee Yong-jik.

368) The article could not be located in the *Los Angeles Times*; Perhaps Rhee misreported the name of the newspaper.

## September 24

Sunday, in the evening, the Korean general reception was held. The banquet at the Chinese restaurant was a brilliant affair, attended by almost 100 men, women, and young people. <구><sup>369</sup> as chairman of the local Dongji Hoi was presiding. Later the mass meeting included special music by the local Korean orchestra, songs and speeches and presentation of flowers and gifts by the young people. I spoke to them of my mission to Europe and our possibilities in the Far Eastern Conflicts etc. An unusually large crowd turned out and demonstrated much enthusiasm and cordial spirit. They raised funds for our traveling expenses.

## September 25

In the afternoon Chang and I drove out to Santa Barbara, about 100 miles, to see <조승렬><sup>370</sup> and his wife. We saw <김영우><sup>371</sup> there. After lunch we returned, Cho and wife in their car lead us through the high side towns to the main highway. We took the side driveway and returned by the inland route. It was beautiful.

In the evening I spoke at an international Forum meeting under the auspices of one of the local colleges. Professor Harton and several young people including Soonkee Lee and his two daughters took me to the meeting. They wanted me to stay over so that they could arrange a big meeting for me but I told them that I would let them know ahead of my next visit.

## September 27

At 9 a.m. we left Los Angeles for Salt Lake City. On the way we stopped at Upland [California] to see Mrs. Stewart<sup>372</sup> at her home.

369) An unknown Dongji-hoe member with the surname "Gu."

370) Jo Seung-ryeol.

371) Kim Yeong-u.

372) Likely Mrs. William Boyd Stewart, a Sunday school teacher at Upland Presbyterian Church. She was a noted friend of Koreans in California.

At 6:20 p.m. we reached Las Vegas, Nevada and stopped at Hotel Boulder.

### September 28

At 6:50 a.m. we left Las Vegas and traveling through Arizona and Nevada deserts, we reached Salt Lake City at 8:50 p.m. Stopped at Hotel Perry. The following morning at 9:10 we left Salt Lake City. Driving slowly through the valley among the mountains back of the city, we enjoyed the gorgeous autumn-colored landscape which was just in right time to see. We again passed through a part of the Zion National Park. At 6:20 p.m. we stopped at Rawlins, Wyoming, as we felt a little too tired to travel further that day. Hotel Ferris.

### September 30

At 6:50 a.m. we left Rawlins and reached Denver at 1:40 p.m. Stopped at the same hotel, The Argonaut. In the evening Chang left Denver in order to make a trip to Indianapolis and <to> meet me in Chicago by the time I arrive in the latter city.

While in Denver, I met a number of American friends and drove to Boulder to see Professor Roger Williams of Boulder University.

### October 4

At 7:30 a.m. I left Denver for Kansas City. From there to Chicago I was to travel alone. When I came to a small bridge about 100 miles from Denver, a street grader was coming towards me and I took it for a truck. But at the bridge I discovered that it was a grader with its steel shovel or the end of its plain sticking towards my side. I could not stop the car and the grader drove right along and hit my rear wheel, sending my car zig-zag into a deep sand ditch. I managed to start the car and drove out to the road. It happened in a wilderness—no house or town near. The so-called gravel road along that part of the country was so bad and rough that I was unable to speed and that saved me from a worse accident at the bridge. A front wheel was damaged with its hubcap off and a win-

dow glass (safety glass) cracked. Five young men in a car happened to be along hitched my car to theirs and drove about 30 miles to a small town, Cheyenne Wells, Colorado. We reached there at 4 p.m. Leaving the car in the service station for repair, I stopped at the Plains Hotel. The hotel manager, a Danish man, was very cordial and kind after a friendly conversation with me, as I told him that I was a school teacher and that I was on a vacation tour, etc. and he introduced me to the judge and sheriff of the town and his wife. There I met a man who was hitch-hiking and wanted to go back to Kansas City.

### October 5

At 12:15 p.m. the car was ready and I left Cheyenne Well<s> with the hitch-hiker for Kansas City. Later in the afternoon I let him do the driving and we traveled all night, and passed Fort Riley, where stood the stone monument indicating the geographical centre of the United States. We reached Kansas City at 3:15 a.m. He, the hitch-hiker, left me in the city and I stopped at Hotel Lafayette, being near our stopping place downtown. The next morning, Oct. 6, I went to the Oriental Food Product Co. and <이관수><sup>373)</sup> and <이성식><sup>374)</sup> entertained me and I moved to the hotel Princeton, near the Company.

### October 7

At 8 a.m. I left Kansas City. The Food Product Company's young employee drove out to show me the way to the highway out of the city.

At 7:30 p.m. I reached Bloomington, Ill. and stopped at Hotel Hamilton. The next morning I left Bloomington and reached Chicago about 11 a.m. but came to Jung and Co. 2312 Indiana Ave. at about 12:20 p.m. having lost a lot of time in finding the way. T.E. Jung, Hansu Oh and wife and Kim Honkey and others entertained me while there. They reserved a room for me at the Palmer House hotel.

373) Lee Gwan-su.  
374) Lee Seong-sik.

Sunday evening at the Korean Church they held a large reception at a meeting presided over by Honkey Kim as Chairman of Dongji Hoi. We visited the World's Fair once again and friends took us to "the Chinese Theatre" in the Fair where all the participants were Chinese.

#### October 9

At 3:15 p.m. we left Chicago for New York, Chang having arrived from Indianapolis the day before. At 6:30 p.m. we arrived at St. Joseph, Ind. and stopped at Hotel Denness

#### October 10

At 6:30 a.m. we left St. Joseph and arrived at Detroit at 12:15 p.m. We went to Jhung and Co. where Jhung Yangpil, C.C. Ahn, Joe Oh Heung and Joe Dai Heung entertained. We stopped at C.C. Ahn's house.

#### October 11

At 10 a.m. left Detroit with Jhung and wife leading us to Ann Arbor, Michigan, to pay a brief call on Professor and Mrs. W. Carl Rufus<sup>375</sup> at the University of Michigan. Prof. Rufus took us to the University Common or Club and treated us at a dinner, after which he took us to Cooke Hall, Girls' dormitory and met Rose Shon, <손창희 여아><sup>376</sup>. At 8 p.m. we reached Cleveland and suppered at the Korean Chop Suey restaurant where we met several Koreans who paid our hotel bill at Hotel Amsterdam.

375) Will Carl Rufus (1876–1946) was a professor of astronomy at the University of Michigan. Rufus and his wife served as Methodist missionaries to Korea, c. 1909–17. He taught mathematics at Union Christian College (합성승실대학) in Pyongyang and Chosen Christian College (now Yonsei University). For more than twenty years, Rufus was the secretary of the Barbour Scholarship program.

376) "The daughter of Son Chang-hui." Rose Shon was a Barbour Scholar at the University of Michigan from Honolulu, Hawaii. She may have been a student of Rhee as a young girl.

#### October 12

At 7:45 a.m. we left Cleveland and on the way we stopped at Niagara Falls only for a short time. At 11:50 p.m. we reached Syracuse and stopped overnight in a private house by a filling station. We told them that we had not enough money for \$1 room and they gave us one room for two of us for a dollar.

#### October 13

At 7:50 a.m. we left Syracuse and at 12:10 p.m. reached Troy, N.Y. There we met Mr. Ahn and another Korean and stayed at Hotel Trojan.

#### October 14

At 7:15 a.m. we left Troy and by way of Albany we arrived at New York City at 12:15 p.m. We stopped at Hotel Marseilles where I had left my trunk and things. David Namkoong, Choi Yong Chin and others entertained us while in that city. During our stay there I went several times to the lawyer's office designated by the Honolulu lawyers before whom I signed the deposition papers concerning the Honolulu church trial.

#### October 17

At 2:40 p.m. we left New York and at 12:10 p.m. stopped at Hotel Grand in Baltimore. The following day at 7:45 a.m. left Baltimore arrived at Washington and stayed in Franklin Park Hotel.

#### Tour in America

Sept. 1 to Oct. 17, 1933

Total: 37 days

Total mileage over 9,000 miles

December 7

I saw John W. Stagers<sup>377</sup>, lawyer and owner of Columbian building and he offered a room in his building for \$15 per month for a period renewable at the end of the year, and also his legal service as the counselor for the Korean Commission free of charge with the exception of cases in which much of his time is required and such events a written agreement should be made upon the amount which we should pay. I asked him to make a written statement to that effect and he did. So Kee Young Chang and I talked it over and decided to move our office to the Columbian Building on the 11th instant.

While I was out Lawrence Todd came and told Mr. Chang that the Russian Embassy sent him to express their appreciation of my letters which I addressed one to Litvinoff and Skiversky<sup>378</sup> congratulating upon the diplomatic relations opening with the U.S. etc. He said they were sorry that they failed to officially express their appreciation but they hope that we might excuse them, realizing the situation they were in etc.

December 11

The Korean Commission moved to Columbian Building, 5th St. between D. and E. northwest. The owner of the building, John W. Stagers, offered the room, 312, for \$15 a month for a year; renewable at the end of the year and also his service as Counselor to the Korean Commission with the understanding that in case much of his time is required to serve as counselor, a written agreement upon the amount of his compensation will be made in advance and that otherwise his legal advice will be given without charge. Kee Young Chang moved to the new quarters. The manager of the Peoples' Life Building will wait for us to pay the back account of the office rental aggregating a sum of \$130 which incurred during my absence in the spring and summer while I was away in Europe.

<sup>377</sup> John Wesley Stagers (b. 1887), a Washington, D.C., lawyer, was a friend and legal adviser to Rhee. Stagers had been an associate of Fred Dolph, the Korean Commission's first legal adviser, and had known Rhee since at least 1920. With the Rev. Frederick Brown Harris and journalist Jay Jerome Williams, Stagers became a trustee of the Korean-American Council when it was formed in 1942.

<sup>378</sup> Boris Skvirsky was the Soviet chargé d'affaires in Washington, D.C., when the two countries resumed diplomatic relations in November 1933.

## CHAPTER 3

1934

January 10

During the week, the plan for re-organization of the Korea Society or League of the Friends of Korea brought a number of Friends together at a lunch with Charles Ed. Russell and John W. Stagers and later we discussed the proposition at Stagger's office in Columbian Bldg. Today at a lunch with Williams<sup>379</sup> I showed him the proposed objects and names etc. and told him that the Far Eastern Association or some such name which is much broader in scope than Korea Society. He heartily agreed on that. Then I revealed to him the Vienna affair and he said asking the U.S. Consul in Vienna to visae the passport of Miss Donner granting her to enter U.S. he would find out everything about it for me when he returns from New York Monday.

January 21

Sunday at 1 p.m. I left Washington with John W. Stagers in my car and drove up to N.Y. We made several stops on the way and a long visit with the Millers<sup>380</sup> at Bryn Mawr. I drove some but Stagers did most of the driving. At 12:30 a.m. we reached New York City. Stagers stopped at Hotel Pa. and I drove up to Hotel Marseilles, 103 St. and Broadway room 421. The officers of Dongji Hoi will entertain Stagers at dinner in Chin's restaurant near the Pa. Hotel at 7 p.m. Tuesday Jan. 23.

<sup>379</sup> Jay Jerome Williams (b. 1893) was a journalist and publicity agent who became a trustee of the Korean-American Council when it was formed in 1942. Rhee first met Williams in 1919.

<sup>380</sup> Herbert A. Miller joined the faculty of Bryn Mawr College in 1933.

## February 18

Sunday at 3 p.m. I left Hotel Marseilles and accompanied by Kee Young Chang and Tom Wooh came to Hotel Wolcott, 5th Ave. at 31st St. N.Y.C. Room no. 1411. Mr. Sidney Strong<sup>381</sup> lives on the same floor Room no. 1406

## April 7

We moved into Room no. 612 Bowery Savings Bank. The Far Eastern Union with the New Orient magazine work started.<sup>382</sup> My original plan was to start the magazine in Washington in a small scale with Russell<sup>383</sup> as editor. But during my visit in New York, the Chinese invited and entertained me and showed their interests in the publication and American friends also suggested that we start in N.Y. The Chinese organized a committee representing various organizations in N.Y. Chinatown and so did the Koreans. Chang Duk Soo and Chulwon Ryee<sup>384</sup> cooperating. I asked for 1,000 pledges \$4 a year among the N.Y. Chinese and a couple of thousands among those in other cities. We made a contact with W.T. Ullman, head of the Inspiration Publishing Co. He agreed to put out 10,000 copies of "Orient" for \$8000 toward which sum we were to pay \$400 with the understanding that at the end, from 6 to 8 months, if successful, we will make a contract under which the publishing company will receive one-half of the net profit. Meantime I had Homer B. Hulbert to come and stay a month in N.Y. in helping to write articles for the magazine. Unfortunately Ullman was suddenly stricken ill and laid off for 4 weeks. Consequently we failed to get out the first number by the 10th of May. Then we tried to get the Chinese to get us definite pledges. Meanwhile K.C. Wu (吳乾初) president of

381) Sydney Dix Strong (1860 - 1938) was a pacifist, author, journalist, and Social Gospel minister. He spent several years in Geneva in the early 1930s as an observer of the League of Nations.

382) The first issue of the magazine was published as the *Orient* in September 1934 with Charles Edward Russell listed as the editor.

383) Charles Edward Russell.

384) Ryee (이철원, 1900 - 1979) participated in the March First Movement as a high school student. While studying at Columbia University he served as the secretary of the Korean Student Association. He returned to Korea in 1934 and was arrested in the Korean Language Society Incident (1942).

〈中華公所〉<sup>385</sup> retired upon the expiration of his term of office and was succeeded by 〈Luise—〉 who showed very little interest in the magazine project and the commission failed to get any pledges at all. At several dinner occasions in Chinatown I told them that unless we get some tangible help either in cash or pledges, we Koreans alone cannot undertake the publication. William Lee, Howard Lee and Chin Tong (李培, 陳樹棠, 李傑民) three active members of their committee with Seto (司徒一平)<sup>386</sup> promised to start a subscription campaign in N.Y. first and to cover other sides. Believing that will produce sufficient number of pledges to insure the publication for at least a year.

## June 7

At 9 a.m. I left N.Y. in my car alone and arrived in Washington at 5 p.m. I stopped overnight at the Hamilton Hotel.

## June 8

I moved from Hamilton to Parkside Hotel. During my visit I saw several friends, conferred with C.E. Russell about the magazine problem, a dinner at William's and called at the State Dept. where I left card for Mr. Hornbeck, head of the Far East Division. Williams took up the Vienna matter with Drew Pearson and hoped to put it through. Later I learned that the State Dept. wired U.S. Consul at Vienna twice but no result. Drew Pearson stated in his daily news column that the consul was too slow about visa matters. A distinguished Oriental gentleman applied for a visa on a Vienna lady's passport so that she could come and marry him but the consul has been slow in the matter, etc.<sup>387</sup>

I stopped at the Howard-Scripps news office and had an interesting conversation as he<sup>388</sup>

385) The Chinese Consolidated Benevolent Association.

386) Situ Yiping.

387) See Drew Pearson, "The Weekly Washington Merry-Go-Round", *Salt Lake City Tribune*, 23 September 1934. This entry reveals the way Rhee kept his diary. Not all entries were written contemporaneously. Parts of this entry were written after 23 September, the date of Pearson's article.

388) Possibly Drew Pearson.

had just returned from a four month tour as “foreign editor” around the world. George Abel who mentioned my visit in the Daily News, Washington was out. John W. Stagers promised to take up S.C. Choi’s business matter in Schofield Barracks<sup>389)</sup> so that he will be protected from any unfair competition.

### June 15

At 6 a.m. I left Washington and driving alone I reached N. Y at 4:30 p.m. I went to Namkoong’s and he and I drove to Apt. 140 Claremont Ave. and secured room no. 630.

### July 22

At 9 a.m. I left N.Y. for Washington driving alone and reached Washington 7 p.m. Stopped at room 205 Parkside Hotel. During my visit there I called on Dr. Hornbeck at the State Dept. and had a conversation about the magazine (far eastern situation)<sup>390)</sup> and personal matters. He introduced me to Mr. Coulter, Chairman of Visa Dept. and had a nice talk. Mr. Coulter promised to wire the Consul again and see what he can do for me. With John W. Stagers I took up the question of Choi Sun Choo at his suggestion that Choi make application to the army officers in Luke Field<sup>391)</sup> and then let him have the copy. He will see what can be done to help him out.

### July 25

At 2:30 p.m. with John W. Stagers I left Washington and reached N.Y. at about 11 p.m. He was driving my car most of the way. I brought my trunk of books. I returned to Claremont Club 140 Claremont Ave. occupying the same room 630.

During the summer we worked in the Bowery Bank Building in New York for the publication of the Far Eastern Magazine.<sup>392)</sup>

389) A U.S. Army installation in Hawaii.

390) Probably the *Orient* magazine.

391) A U.S. military installation on Ford Island in Pearl Harbor, Hawaii.

392) Probably the *Orient* magazine.

### September 26

I received cable message from Vienna informing that Fanny<sup>393)</sup> secured visa from the U.S. Consul and that she would sail aboard the S.S. Europa on the 28th of September.

### October 4

At 3 p.m. Europa landed in New York harbor. The boat arrived on time but Mrs. Kimberland<sup>394)</sup>, Mrs. Namkoong Yum and I were delayed on account of the traffic and Fanny found no one to meet her. She landed and waited over an hour on the pier. She was disappointed and did not know what to do. Then we arrived to meet her and we were happy beyond expression. Arrangements had been made through Col<sup>395)</sup> and Mrs. Kimberland to have a room in Hotel Montclair opposite the Waldorf Astoria on Lexington Ave. and took taxi with baggage on it, and drove to hotel Montclair where the Kimberlands were living. I was still living in the Claremont Club near International House.

In the evening we drove up to Namkoong’s house and took Mrs. Namkoong with us to Butler Hall where we took dinner and discussed our plan for the wedding.

### October 5

We went with Mrs. Kimberland to the City Hall and secured our marriage license.

### October 6

We went with Mrs. Namkoong to Macy’s and there I bought a ring and Fanny a veil.

393) Rhee frequently referred to Francesca Donner as “Fanny” (also Fany, Fanie, and Fannie). He did so from this point forward in the diary.

394) Angie Graham Kimberland (b. 1881) had been a friend of Rhee and was active in the cause of Korean independence since at least 1921. See Kimberland to Fred A. Dolph, 3 March 1921, in Lew, *Rhee Correspondence in English*, 5:569.

395) H. Maynard Kimberland, the husband of Angie Kimberland.

## October 7

Sunday, we both went to the office of the Far Eastern Magazine<sup>396</sup> and sent a long letter to Honolulu, H.K. Ahn, Dongji Hoi officer and also to Nodie Kimhaikim, superintendent of Korean Christian Institute explaining our plans in full.

## October 8

Monday at 6:30 p.m. we were married in a special hall in Hotel Montclair. The Revs. John Haynes Holmes<sup>397</sup> and P.K. Yoon jointly officiated. Mrs. Kimberland and Mrs. Namkoong acting as bridesmaid and maid of honor; Col. Kimberland and Rev. Reimer, Old Princeton friend acting as best men. The American, Chinese and Korean friends who were present all signed the book giving the wedding account in detail.

After the ceremony, we came down to the hotel's main dining hall where a dinner was ready for all those present at the wedding. During the course of dinner the hotel orchestra played wedding march in our honor.

## October 9

At 3 p.m. we left N.Y. and drove to Philadelphia arriving there at 6 p.m. and stopped at Parker House. In the evening we went to Fox Theatre.

## October 10

We drove out to Bryn Mawr to visit Dr. and Mrs. Miller (Rudolph A.) professor in Bryn Mawr College<sup>398</sup>. We had lunch at the Miller's. After that Professor Miller took us though

396) Probably the *Orient* magazine.

397) Holmes (1879 – 1964) was a Unitarian minister and pacifist. He co-founded the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People and the American Civil Liberties Union. Holmes' anti-war stance during World War I and II drew significant criticism in the United States, as did his early support of the Bolshevik revolution. Rhee may have met Holmes in 1919 through the League of Oppressed Peoples, which championed self-determination for Koreans and others. Holmes was listed as a "sponsor" of that League on its letterhead. See Arthur Upham Pope to Philip Jaisohn, 28 October 1919, in Lew, *Rhee Correspondence in English*, 4:470.

398) Almost certainly Herbert A. Miller.

the College campus. We visited Dr. and Mrs. Jaisohn at Media, Pa. and Dr. Pum Koo Park <박범구> in their home in Chester, Pa.

## October 11

About 10 a.m. we left for Washington and arrived there about 6 p.m. Stopped at Parkside Hotel, room 202. In the evening we drove around to see the capitol etc. Then dinner at a Chinese restaurant.

## October 12

In the morning we went to the State Dept. to see Mr. Hornbeck but he was not in. Saw Mr. Coulter, the head of the Visa division and thanked him for his good offices.

We bought a few presents which were presented to Stagers (John), Drew Pearson and Jay Jerome Williams.

Took picture in front of Lincoln Memorial.

We stopped to see Mr. and Mrs. Yun Chiyoung <윤치영> and Mr. Yoon Hongsup <윤홍섭, Queen Yoon's brother><sup>399</sup> in the afternoon.

## October 13

In the afternoon we drove out to Cherrydale, Va. to see Mr. and Mrs. Jay Jerome Williams in their home.

We called on Drew Pearson and <Prince> Yoon<sup>399</sup> and his wife.

## October 14

Mrs. Yoon and we went to Mt. Vernon<sup>400</sup> but we found the place closed. Then we drove to Alexandria, <& saw> a memorial which is not yet finished.

399) Yoon (Yoon Hong Sub) was a Ph.D. candidate in politics at American University in Washington, D.C.

400) The home of George Washington (1732 – 1799), the first president of the United States.

## October 15

In the afternoon we called on Mrs. <P.> Douglas Birnie<sup>401)</sup> at her home.

## October 16

We left Washington for N.Y. at 10 a.m. We took the ferry at New Port by route 25 via Allentown <N.J.> to see Rev. Yoon <윤병구>. We arrived in N.Y. about 10 p.m. and stopped at Hotel Claremont, Room 319.

## October 20

The 2nd copy of the Orient Magazine is out.

## October 21

The 2nd copy of the Orient Magazine must be reprinted on account of an article re: Koreans and Philippines.

We visited Dr. <Charles Ed.> Russell who was sick in bed.

## October 23

We received congratulation from Honolulu and a cable saying that I should come first alone and leave Mrs. Rhee in N.Y.<sup>402)</sup>

## October 25

Honolulu asked again that I come alone.

2nd copy of Orient Magazine has come out and mailed.

401) Possibly the wife of Douglas Putnam Birnie, a pastor of the Union Church in Honolulu, Hawaii.

402) Some members of the U.S. Korean community were initially hostile to Rhee's marriage to a non-Korean woman, some claiming that Rhee himself had spoken against such marriages for years. The hostility may have lingered in private, but the Rhees received a warm public reception in Hawaii when they landed in January 1935. For more on Korean responses to Rhee's marriage, see Lew, *The Making of the First Korean President*, 199–200; and Kim, *The Writings of Henry Cu Kim*, 243.

## November 2

We left N.Y. at 9:30 a.m. and crossed the N.Y. ferry. We took Highway 9 w. and enjoyed a beautiful view down the Hudson River. We stopped at Kingston for lunch. We passed Albany about 3:30 p.m. and reached Troy at 4 p.m. stopping at Hotel Trojan. We had dinner with Mr. Ahn and Mr. Kim.

## November 3

We had breakfast with Mr. Ahn and Mr. Kim and left Troy at 8:30 a.m. On the way we saw several lakes and then came to Waterloo where we took the road to Rochester. From there we went to Niagara Falls City and arrived at 8:30. Stopping at a private home.

## November 4

In the forenoon we visited the falls and owing to the loss of my passport we couldn't go via Canada to Detroit. Therefore we started at 1:30 p.m. for Erie and encountered heavy storm and rain. We took Route 5 along the shore and came to Erie at 5:30. We stopped in a little Town Inn on Highway 20.

## November 5

At 7:30 a.m. we followed Highway 20 and passed Cleveland at 11 a.m. We took Highway 2 and crossed Bay Bridge, 150 St. and came to Toledo <Ohio> at 4 p.m. We followed Highway 25 and arrived in Detroit at 6:30. We stopped in Granwood Hotel.

## November 6

We had lunch at Mrs. Ahn's <안재창><sup>403)</sup> place, and dinner at Mrs. Cho's <조대홍><sup>404)</sup>. After dinner we met Chinese leaders.

403) Ahn Jae-chang.

404) Jo Dae-heung.

## November 7

We had breakfast and lunch at Mrs. C.C. Ahn's. In the evening a banquet was given by the 〈Korean〉 leaders of Detroit. We received a silver 〈set for〉 wedding present from them.

## November 8

We started at 10:30 a.m. for South Bend, 〈Indiana〉 and stopped at Ann Arbor to see Dr. Rufus. We arrived in South Bend and stayed with Mrs. Hahn 〈한백선〉.

## November 9

We left at 10 a.m. for Chicago and arrived at 1 p.m. There we stopped at Hotel Metro-pole.

In the evening we had dinner with Mr. Honkey Kim 〈김홍기〉 and 〈T〉. Namkoong 〈남궁택〉.

## November 10

Drove with Mrs. Han Su Oh 〈오한수〉 to Benesville [Illinois] to see Korean farmers who moved from Montana. In the evening we had dinner at Mrs. Shill's home. We tried to get her interested in selling the magazine.

## November 11

In the afternoon we were invited by Mr. and Mrs. Taylor<sup>405)</sup> publisher of Agricultural Leaders Digest.

At 7 p.m. we had meeting with the Chinese leaders, 〈about Far East Magazine〉.

405) Estes P. Taylor.

## November 12

In the evening a dinner party was given by the Koreans at the Pagoda in 〈our〉 honor. At 11 p.m. I attended Dr. Sun Yat Sen's celebration at the Chinese Embassy.

## November 13

At 7 p.m. we had a meeting with the Chinese leaders in Chinatown.

## November 16

At 1:30 p.m. we left Chicago by Highway 47-52 and reached Indianapolis at 5:20 p.m. stopping at Lincoln Hotel. Then we had dinner with Mr. Kim and Mr. Chang 〈장기영〉.

## November 17

We had lunch in Hospital with Dr. Kim 〈김영대〉 in Beach Grove. In the evening some Koreans entertained at Mr. Bhang's Chop Sui house 〈방사겸's restaurant〉.

## November 18

We started at 9 a.m. from Indianapolis. 13 miles out from Terre Haute at 11 a.m. there was a heavy rain and the street was flooded. Our car skidded and spinned around. One back wheel was broken down. We had to get a spare wheel in the next town.

At 2 p.m. we started again for St. Louis and then stopped at the A.A.A. camping ground.

## November 19

At 10:30 a.m. we started for Kansas City and had lunch in Boonville. We encountered heavy rain and storm shortly before we came to Kansas City. We arrived at 6 p.m. and stayed in Princeton Hotel.

## November 20

We had the car repaired at Firestone (garage) and bought two new tires. At 5:30 we left for Harrisville by Highway 66.

## November 21

We left for Tulsa at 7:30 a.m. and there was terrible rain and storm. The road was very bad.

## November 22

We started at 7 a.m. from Tulsa by Highway 66 for Oklahoma City. We arrived at 10:30 a.m. and left at 11 a.m. for Fort Worth, Texas, arriving there at 6:30 p.m. We stopped in Rockway Court on Highway 80. We drove 407 miles that day and stopped in an auto camp.

## November 23

We started for Pecos, Texas at 7 a.m. The change into semi-tropical vegetation was in evidence. We made 409 miles and at 11 p.m. we came to Pecos camping court.

## November 24

We started at 7 a.m. from Pecos and drove for hours thru a stone desert. After Kent we saw high mountains again and still semi-tropical vegetation. About 2 p.m. we reached El Paso on the Mexican borderline. We changed into Mountain Time. We left El Paso for Las Cruces to Deming [New Mexico]. We crossed a sand desert and were caught in a terrible sandstorm. We drove 300 desert miles and at 7 p.m. we reached Deming court camping place.

## November 25

At 7:10 a.m. we started for Phoenix, (Arizona) and enjoyed a wonderful drive. About 6 p.m. we reached Phoenix and stopped at Hotel Adam.

## November 29

We moved to Northern Hotel and had Thanksgiving dinner with Mrs. H.T. Chun (전호택). We attended service in Korean Church.

## November 30

We had dinner with Mrs. Kim (김용중). At 8 p.m. a reception was held in the Methodist Church.

## December 1

We had lunch with (Chinese) General Chang (張發奎)<sup>406</sup> and his wife at Roosevelt Hotel, Hollywood, and dinner with Mrs. Kim Young Jeung. (김용중) At 6 p.m. I attended a banquet given in my (our) honor.

## December 3

We had breakfast with Mrs. Kim (김형순) of Reedley, Cal.

## December 4

We left Los Angeles for Reedley at 4:20 p.m. and arrived there about 10 p.m. We stopped at Hotel Winne's.

## December 5

A reception was held at 7:30 p.m. at the Korean Church in Dinuba (Rev. Lee) (이살음)

<sup>406</sup> Zhang Fakui (1896–1980), a Chinese nationalist general.

## December 6

A banquet was held in my ⟨our⟩ honor at Shanghai Cafe.

## December 7

At 9 a.m. we started for Oakland, ⟨Cal⟩. and arrived at 3 p.m. staying at Hotel, St. Mark.  
At 8 p.m. we attended a banquet and meeting with the Koreans.

## December 8

We left Oakland at 10:30 a.m. and took the ferry to San Francisco. We called on Chinese Consul and stopped at Hotel Washington near Chinatown.  
We sent \$150 Chicago money to New York.

## December 9

In the forenoon we went by street car to the ocean. At 6 p.m. we had dinner with Mrs. Baik Ilkiu.

## December 10

We paid a short visit to General Tsai ⟨蔡楷⟩<sup>407</sup> before he left for Sacramento.  
⟨The famous 19 Route Chinese troop which held up the invading Japanese in Shanghai.⟩

## December 13

Mr. Kim of Reedley went back to Reedley.

## December 14

We had a meeting at the Christian Benevolent Association at 7:30 p.m.

---

407) Tsai Ting-kai (蔡廷楷, 1892–1968) was on a tour of Chinese communities in the U.S. advocating for a unified Chinese response to Japanese aggression. This was opposed to Chiang Kai-shek's strategy of defeating the Chinese communists before dealing with the Japanese.

## December 15

Wrote Christmas cards.

## December 20

We went to Oakland by ferry and came back the same day.

## December 22

We moved to Victoria Hotel, Bush and Stockton Sts.

## December 25

We attended Korean Church at 8 p.m.

## December 26

We had Prof. and Mrs. MacLaughey<sup>408</sup> of Berkeley for dinner.

## December 28

We had lunch with Mr. ⟨V.S.⟩ McClatchy<sup>409</sup>. At 4 p.m. there was a meeting with General Chang ⟨張發奎⟩. Later I saw the editor ⟨Chester Rowell⟩<sup>410</sup> of the newspaper Chronicle about an article.

---

408) Dr. Vaughan MacCaughey.

409) Valentine Stuart McClatchy (1857–1938), a journalist and former owner of the *Sacramento Bee*. He was an eyewitness of the March First Movement (1919) and later became a leader of the anti-Japanese movement in California. His pamphlet about Japan, *The Germany of Asia* (1920), mentioned Rhee and warned that Korea would serve as a model for further Japanese expansion in Asia.

410) Chester Harvey Rowell (1867–1948) was the editor of the *San Francisco Chronicle*, 1932–39. He was also a member of the Institute of Pacific Relations and a strong supporter of the League of Nations.

1944~  
~1944

## CHAPTER 4

1944

Editors' note: Beginning on August 26, entries in the 1944 daybook are sometimes written entirely or partially in a hand that is not Rhee's. The handwriting is likely that of a secretary or perhaps even his wife, Francesca Donner. Rhee probably dictated these entries, which have been marked with a (+).

## January 5

Newsweek Periscope<sup>411</sup> called up and gave the following report: "Anglo-American recognition of the free Korean movement probably a limited form granted the French Liberation Committee—should be forthcoming soon. Incidentally, the Korean resistance to the Japanese has redoubled since the Cairo declaration and the promise of an independent Korea."

## January 18

At 2 p.m. left Washington and reached Norristown, Pa. at 5:20 p.m. Was met by Louis J. Davis who took me to his fine home. Later he took me to the Valley Forge hotel where we had dinner with William Hendrickson, the Mayor, Smillie, District Attorney and others. Benjamin J. Evans, President of the chamber of Commerce for 10 years etc. At 9 o'clock I spoke at the B'nai Brith Lodge in the Jewish Community Center. Reached Philadelphia at 11:50 p.m. and waited at the station until 2:20 a.m. for the jammed train for Washington. Returned home at 5:30 a.m. the following day, the 19th.

411) "Periscope" was a long-running column in *Newsweek*, an American weekly magazine.

## January 19

At 6:30 p.m. Fanny took me to the Union Station on our car and I left by Pa. R.R. Washington for Ashland, O[hio]. Sara Park, Lts. Douglass and Woonsu Chung were on the same train. I went to [bed?] and slept there.

## January 20

About 8 a.m. landed in Mansfield, O[hio] While looking for a Taxi Kee Young Chang, Soonyong Lee & other uniformed "boys" were found waiting for us. We drove to Ashland<sup>412</sup> and went to Joseph's restaurant. American flags were in evidence along the streets and a "Welcome Koreans" sign was hung across the Main St. The K[orean] flags were also flying everywhere. Later we went to the Chamber of Commerce building which was the headquarters of the Recognition Conference and leading citizens & the mayor, Haller welcomed us. "The city was entirely yours", they said. "All the jail keys and police badges have been taken away. So you can do any thing you like during the Conference." Dr. Douglass<sup>413</sup>, Staggers, Williams & I were at John C. Myer's<sup>414</sup> house and Lts. Douglass and Chung Mrs. Fitch<sup>415</sup>, Sara Park, Mrs. Engles & Joan Namkoong at Mrs. Guy Myer's during the Conference.

412) During 21–22 January 1944, Ashland, Ohio, hosted the Korean Recognition Conference to draw attention to the KPG's request for recognition as an ally of the United Nations. Portions of the conference were broadcast nationwide on the Mutual Radio Network. Several conference speeches were inserted into the *Congressional Record*. See J. Harry McGregor, "The Korean Movement", *Congressional Record*, 78th Cong., 2nd Sess. (7 February 1944), A600–602.

413) Paul Frederick Douglass (1905–1988), a journalist and minister, was president of American University in Washington, D.C., 1941–52. Douglass served as an adviser to President Rhee, 1952–55.

414) John C. Myers was the president of F.E. Myers and Brother, a major producer of water pumps in the United States.

415) Geraldine Townsend Fitch (1892–1976) was the wife of George Ashmore Fitch and a missionary to China and Korea. Fitch authored several articles urging American support for Korean independence in the 1940s and was a speaker at the Korean Liberty Conference in 1942. See *Korean Liberty Conference, Washington, D.C., February 27, 28, March 1, 1942* (Los Angeles: United Korean Committee in America, 1942).

## February 4

Dr. Liu Chieh<sup>416</sup> Minister of Information in the Chinese Empire made an appointment with Dr. Ting-fu Tsiang, 蔣廷黻, former Chinese ambassador to Russia, for me to see at 4 p.m. Saturday, February 5. At 4 p.m. I went to Wardman Park hotel and Dr. Liu came and we both went up to the room 291. Dr. Tsiang's secretary Shia<sup>?</sup> met us and ushered us in. I thanked him for mentioning Korea in his address & also thanked for Generalissimo Chiang's<sup>417</sup> part in the Cairo declaration. He showed me his speech in which he would repeatedly say Korea must be free & independent and more than that the U. Nations must give Korea aids. He asked me if any Koreans want to come from Chungking & any one to come from there. I said 趙素昂<sup>418</sup> wants to come but I want to go there and then they may come later. We need financial help. He said "we will help." I told him about the request made to U.S. He asked me how much it was & I said it was a small sum. I will present a program to him.

## February 8

Staggers, Williams, and Mrs. Rhee held a formal meeting of the K.A. Council<sup>419</sup> board. Dr. Rhee was present with Staggers as chairman actions were taken in reference to the handling of the Council funds, about \$1400.00 on hand and the establishment of a separate office with its own full time secretary. So far the work had to be combined with the Commission and Christian Friends<sup>420</sup>, due to the lack of funds, but now that it has a small sum to count on, it shall be kept separate.

416) Liu (1905–1991), an Oxford-educated Chinese diplomat, represented China at the Dumbarton Oaks and San Francisco conferences that led to the founding of the United Nations. Liu served as the Republic of China's permanent representative to the United Nations, 1962–71, frequently serving as president of the Security Council.

417) Chiang Kai-shek.

418) Jo So-ang.

419) The Korean-American Council was a pro-Korean lobby and publicity organization formed by Rhee, Jay Jerome Williams, John Staggers, and the Rev. Frederick Brown Harris in 1942.

420) The Christian Friends of Korea was another pro-Korean lobby established by Rhee and his supporters.

## February 10

Minister Liu Chieh of the Chinese Embassy made an appointment without my request with Dr. Wang Shih-Chieh, head of the Chinese good will mission to Great B. who stopped at the Shoreham<sup>421</sup> on his way back to Chungking. He was all for Korea and said China will give Korea all the help needed etc. He took a package of letters, one for Kim Ku<sup>422</sup> and the other for Tjosowang. His party consists of Neu Yuan-Ming and Han Li-Wu.

## March 7

Had a talk with Stanley Hornbeck at his office in the State Dept. I congratulated on his new appointment as assistant Secretary of State etc. Asked if there is any change of policy regarding Korea. He said, he sees no change. I said we cannot understand why Koreans are singled out. It seems unfair. He said, whether it is fair or unfair the world does not run as we like to see it run. The weather for instance we have to take it as it comes. I said, we have to take the weather as it comes, but you know whether it is rain or sunshine. You know what is fair and unfair. He said we can not give K. what we give to the Dutch. I said we never ask for what you give to the Russians or the British but we refuse to be discriminated against. He said we are not discriminating. I said, what is it then. Every nation in Europe & Asia are included among the United Nations except K. Some people who have not even any nationality to represent but all are included as allies. K. with its population, history and sentiment of the people should be the first one to be considered but we are singled out. If the Ks ever joined hands with the enemies of the U.S. as the Finns did, it might be different but Ks never did—etc.

Mentioned the request of Tjosowang & 4 others to come to U.S. He referred it to the

421) The Omni Shoreham is a well-known Washington, D.C., hotel.

422) Kim (김구, 1876–1949), a former Donghak rebel and famous Korean patriot, served as president of the KPG, 1940–47. After liberation he was united with Rhee in opposing trusteeship for Korea, but not in establishing a separate government in southern Korea. He was assassinated in Seoul.

new head of J. & K.<sup>423)</sup> division, Dickover.<sup>424)</sup> Then I arose & he called up Dickover and introduced him & Dickover will consider my requests & let me know later.

### March 9

I asked Mrs. Engles whether it was Stagers' wish to keep Mrs. Hills in his office. Mrs. Hills is our new stenographer for K.A.C.<sup>425)</sup> and Stagers keeps her to operate the telephone keyboard. I thought we would have her come to the office of the Christian Friends & work with Mrs. Fry<sup>426)</sup>.

### March 10

Stagers told me that I did not need to worry about the registration of the K.A. Council and C.F. of Korea. The letter from Justice Dept. inquiring about certain information did not mean any thing and that he would take care of the registration and therefore I should not think of the matter at all. J.J. Williams and I were together in his room in the Ambassador hotel.

### March 11

Left Washington at 10 p.m. for New York and arrived at 8 a.m. on the 16th to attend the Inaugural Ceremony of the Institute of Democracy at Woochefee University 85-86 Riverside Drive, N.Y.C. Dr. Wousaofong, president of the Woochefee University in America. Prof. Li-Yuying, President of Woochefee University in China<sup>427)</sup>.

423) "Japan and Korea." This office was actually called the Division of Japanese Affairs, although its jurisdiction included Korea.

424) Erle Roy Dickover.

425) The Korean-American Council.

426) Possibly Gwendolyn R. Frye, who was acting as Rhee's secretary in Washington, D.C., in 1947.

427) This entry was struck out of the original because it was misdated. Rhee reproduced and expanded this entry on 15 March.

### March 14

Handed to Mrs. Hsiao, our neighbor, wife of Col. Hsiao a letter which I asked her to transmit to her husband in Chungking.

### March 15

Left 10 p.m. for New York to attend the inaugural ceremony of the Institute of Democracy, 85-86 Riverside Drive at the Woochefee University in America, of which Dr. Wou-Saofong is the President. This is the American branch of that university of which Prof. Li-Yuying<sup>428)</sup> is the President. Dr. Li is one of the fathers of the Republic of China together with Sun-Yatsen. He is known to be the only gentleman Mme. Chiang Kai-sek<sup>429)</sup> called on when she was in America.

When he came from Europe in 1940 he and his secretary Mr. Liu came to our house unannounced and without appointment and paid a visit.

### March 16

At 8 a.m. arrived in N.Y. City and registered at Commodore hotel, room 914.

At 10:30 Dr. Underwood<sup>430)</sup> came and we talked until after 12 p.m. Choi Yong-chin and I went to the Chinese restaurant, the Han Young, 89th St. & Broadway. There the Institute of Democracy held a big luncheon. About 100 guests were present. Dr. Li Yuying & others welcomed us and led me to the table with Dr. Pane?<sup>431)</sup> Dean of N.Y. University, French ambassador, Dr. Yu, Chinese Consul General of N.Y. & others.

After the lunch we all went over to the Institute—81 St. & Riverside Drive. The house was purchased for the school and the ceremony was held there. I was one of the speak-

428) Li (Li Shizeng, 1881 – 1973), an intellectual and Kuomintang elder statesman.

429) Soong May-ling (1897 – 2003) was the American-educated wife of Chiang Kai-shek. Her visits to the U.S. on lobbying missions for Chiang, captivated American audiences and drew significant media attention. She addressed a joint meeting of the United States Congress in 1943.

430) Likely Horace Horton Underwood (1890 – 1951), a second-generation American missionary and educator in Korea and the son of Horace G. Underwood.

431) E. George Payne.

ers. After the ceremony a group picture of Dr. Li, Mme. Chang (C.K. Chang, 張靜江<sup>432</sup>) also one of the fathers of Chinese Republic) Mrs. Wou-Saofong & myself was taken.

Dinner at the Russian restaurant with [William?] & Choi.

### March 17

At 10:00 a.m. Bruno Shaw<sup>433</sup> came to see me at the hotel. 2 photographers also came and took my picture.

Mr. Ed. Parish came to take lunch with me but as we talked in the mazanine and it was too late for it when got through talking and we postponed lunch to some other time. I left N.Y. at 1:55 p.m. for Princeton.

At 3:30 p.m. arrived in Princeton and registered at the Princeton Inn, room 232. From there I went to the Trinity Nassau Building and talked with Prof. Sly and Dr. Carpenter.<sup>434</sup> Later I walked to the Hunt School building where Dr. Channing Liem<sup>435</sup> & family are living. Mrs. Liem and children were home but Mr. Liem went to N.Y. He was to be back at 7 p.m. I asked her to come with him to take dinner. He did [not] return on time & I took the dinner alone. In the evening he and his wife came & we talked until midnight.

### March 17

I told Prof. Sly in his office, Twenty Nassau, Princeton that I had written to the State Dept. & the Chinese Embassy about our postwar program for election system etc with

<sup>432</sup> Chang (Zhang Renjie, 1877–1950), a Kuomintang financier and elder statesman.

<sup>433</sup> Shaw (c. 1895–1984) was an American journalist who specialized in China. He founded the *Hankow Herald* and the Trans-Pacific News Service. During World War II, Shaw served in the Far Eastern Division of the Office of War Information, a U.S. government propaganda agency.

<sup>434</sup> John Fairfield Sly (1893–1965) and William Seal Carpenter (b. 1890), professors of politics at Princeton.

<sup>435</sup> Liem (임창영, Channing Liem, 1909–1996) was a Ph.D. candidate at Princeton, where he introduced Rhee to Albert Einstein and other intellectuals. He was active in the Korean independence movement in the 1940s and returned to Korea as Philip Jaisohn's private secretary in 1947. He would become a critic of Rhee's administration in the 1950s, taking a self-imposed exile in the United States. He would briefly serve as Ambassador to the United Nations in Korea's Second Republic. He would later become a professor of international relations at SUNY–New Platz and an out-spoken advocate of Korean unification.

Dr. Sly as the head, and the Chinese Embassy answered favorably but the State Dept. told me they had answered it already but we have not received it yet. Then I said Mr. Dickover, was head of the Division of Japanese Affairs told me that it would be advisable for Prof. Sly to register with the Justice Dept. Sly said he would be willing to register.

He did not know about the formation of the American Committee for Independent Korea in Princeton. Professor Carpenter admitted that he is a member of it. I told Carpenter that Dr. Douglass & I were planning to get K. young people to come & receive various training in Princeton. In the evening Channing Liem & I talked it over and he agreed that the Princeton Committee for Independent K. should support the Kopogo, provisional Gov. He agreed to it. So the committee for K. independence and Constitutional and election Program Committee should work together.

### March 18

Arrived in Washington at 7 p.m.

While in Princeton, Dr. Channing Liem & I interviewed the following persons:

Some of the friends I met in Princeton.

William Seal Carpenter, Chairman of Dept. of Politics, Director of Princeton Surveys.

Luther P. Eisenhart, Dean of the Graduate School.

Dr. & Mrs. John A. Mackay, President of Princeton Seminary.

Dr. & Mrs. Corwin.

Dr. Einstein<sup>436</sup>—Told us a proverb in German & then translated in English. He who lives a good life, lives hidden.

Mrs. Swani? who came to the R.R. station to see me off.

<sup>436</sup> Albert Einstein.

## March 22

We signed the contract agreeing to the terms on the purchase of the house 4700 16 St. N.W.

## March 25

Mrs. Lewis of the Story & Co. brought the contract at last signed by Dr. Wilkinson accepting our offer of \$28,500 for the house 4700 - 16 St.

## April 12

Dr. DeYoung<sup>437</sup> made a request that I see Rev. Whang<sup>438</sup> together with himself, Wonsoon Lee<sup>439</sup> & myself. I consented it and went to the office. He explained how he wanted me to see Mr. Whang etc. Then Whang spoke. He said he had seen most of the Ks in Washington & they want to organize the 議事部<sup>440</sup> of the K.C.<sup>441</sup> I said, there is no such a thing in a legation. However, if all agree I will not object. Wonsoon suggested that the Commission 후원會<sup>442</sup> might be a better name for it. I said, you all think it over.

## April 21

At 11 a.m. met Dr. DeYoung & Mr. W.S. Lee in presence of Mrs. W.S. Lee & Ben Limb, I explained the idea of appointing Dr. Sly of Princeton University as American adviser in Public Administrations preparing for postwar program in election methods and constitution for the Republic of Korea. The Constitution and the methods are to [be] submitted to the K. Congress for consideration.

Mrs. Fry's salary of \$168.00 for this month has to be paid by the Commission as the

437) Henry Chung changed his surname to DeYoung sometime during the 1920s or 1930s.

438) Hwang Sa-yong (황사용, b. 1881), a Korean Methodist minister.

439) Lee (이원순, 1890 - 1993), a member of the Korean Commission, 1943 - 46, met Rhee at the Seoul YMCA in 1910. He immigrated to Hawaii in 1914 and served in several Korean independence organizations including as president of the Dongji-hoe (1929).

440) A type of executive committee.

441) The Korean Commission.

442) "Huwon-hoe" meaning "supporting organization."

Christian Friends of K. has no receipt to meet it. And room rent of \$35.00 has been met by the Christian Friends but since we move to the 16th St. house on the 24 and Mrs. Fry will work in our new place the room rent in the Columbian building has to be met by the Commission.

We discussed the 2 letters from Honolulu & Honaunau should be answered & Feb. & Mar. Western Union bills have been neglected, etc.

## April 22

At 11 a.m. I took Ben Limb to the state Dept. & introduced him to Mr. Dickover & Amos. We discussed the questions, Tjosowang's application for entry permit. He said the groups & deadlock in the [Korea Provisional] Government etc must be taken into consideration. American embassy wired back saying two men applied showing my telegram etc. They still consider the priority for passage also difficult.

Postage stamp. They have no objection, he said.

The Princeton set up of training of Korean technicians etc. He said there is UNRRA<sup>443</sup> request for some one to represent Korea in the UNRRA.

Sent my preface to Dr. Oliver's book<sup>444</sup> to Mr. Schnepfer<sup>445</sup>, the publisher.

Received letter from David J. Yung in Chungking who wants to come with Tjosowang.

## April 23

Mr. North of the U.S. Post Office told us about the issuing of new postage stamps as a tribute to Korea & I told him that Korean flag will be a fine design.<sup>446</sup> Later Kilsoo

443) United Nations Relief and Rehabilitation Administration (1943 - 47).

444) Robert Tarbell Oliver, *Korea: Forgotten Nation* (Washington, D.C.: American Council on Public Affairs, 1944). Oliver (1909 - 2000), a professor of speech, was serving in the Office of Civilian Defense when he met Rhee in 1942. Oliver would become one of Rhee's closest advisers and his biographer. In 1947, Oliver left a professorship at Syracuse University to be Rhee's representative in Washington, D.C. He remained a member of Rhee's staff until Rhee's resignation in 1960.

445) Morris Bartel Schnepfer (c. 1913 - 1999) was a publisher and the proprietor of the Public Affairs Press.

446) The U.S. Post Office included a commemorative stamp for Korea in its "Overrun Countries" series. Korea was the only non-European nation represented.

Haan<sup>447</sup>) wrote circular letters to many Koreans and Americans stating that Mr. Peter Feller or Philer of the P.O. asked him about it & so forth.

#### April 24

Fanny and I vacated the 1766 Hobart St. house and moved to the larger house 4700 - 16th St. N.W. Dr. & Mrs. Wilkinson built this house and lived here all the time since.

He was sick and children married and lived in their own houses and Mrs. Wilkinson found the [house] too large for herself. So they sold it but she was broken down when she had to give up the house.

#### April 25

Moving things from Hobart St. to the 16 St. Had to work all day.

#### April 27

Worked all day every day in packing & unpacking also arranging things in the house. First time since we began moving, I went to the house. Stagers returned from Florida & I stopped at his office to see him.

Thomas Park helped me in planting lillies & hydrangeas etc in the yard.

#### May 14

Namkoong came and we had a good talk. He took dinner at Wonsoon Lee's and went back by night train.

447) Kilsoo Kenneth Haan (한길수, 1900–1976) was the Washington representative of the Sino-Korean People's League, an organization founded in Shanghai in 1932 by Kim Kyu-sik and his Chinese associates to unite Koreans and Chinese in resisting Japanese expansion. From 1938–45 Haan attempted to undermine Rhee's position in Washington as the sole diplomatic representative of the Korean people. Haan's actions highlighted Korean factionalism for American policymakers and provided them with a ready justification for refusing to recognize the KPG.

#### May 16

Prof. Sly came from Princeton and presented his suggestions in typewritten sheets. Dr. Douglass, Dean Robinson were present. Ben [C. Limb] & Wonsoon [Lee] were also present.

#### May 17

James Shinn<sup>448</sup>) came from N.Y. to speak at the Congressional Women's club. Mr. Stagers went to hear and said it was very good.

Ben Limb had another talk with Dickover in the State Dept. who thought it would be easier to have Mr. Tjosowang to come alone at present.

#### May 19

Wired to Kim Sae Sun, Channing Liehm, & Harry Whang<sup>449</sup>) & Kim came from N.Y.

#### May 20

Harry Whang came on the 21, Sunday. Channing Liehm came on 20, Saturday. All the three men accepted the Chairmanship of the proposed Committees.

#### May 23

I took Limb to Dr. Tsiang and Tsiang said the ambassador would come to see him that evening & he would talk over the Korean question with the ambassador.

Asked him if he could see Prof. Sly on Thursday evening & he was going to N.Y. and he would see him Friday morning at 11 o'clock, the 26th.

448) Shinn (신상근), an American-educated surgeon, left his practice in Hawaii in 1943 to become the director general of the Korean-American Council. He toured the U.S. giving lectures urging Americans to support the KPG. After liberation, he continued lecturing, urging Americans to create a free and united Korea.

449) Whang (황창하, Chang-ha Hwang) was the vice-president of the Korean Student Association in the 1920s and a member of the Korean Commission in the 1940s.

## May 24

Mrs. Philips of the Chinese Embassy called up and said the ambassador has to go to N.Y. to-morrow and so he can see me at 5 p.m. today. I said that I have a previous engagement for that hour and would appreciate if he would appoint some other time when he returns from N.Y.

## May 26

Dr. Sly came to see Dr. Tsiang Ting-fu, at 11 a.m. as previously arranged. I took him & Ben Limb 林炳稷 to the Broadmoor Hotel and introduced Dr. Sly to Tsiang. We had introducing talks regarding various colleges, professors and friends. Dr. T. states that those officers in the State Dept. can not do anything. The Russian attitude should be ascertained. If the 3 powers of the Cairo declaration pledge a hands-off policy, China can act alone. Dr. Wei, the ambassador can go ahead.

Dr. Sly will approach Mrs. Roosevelt and ask her or the President to instruct the State Dept. to send identical notes to Russia, China & Britain to declare a hands-off pledge. He would do that within the next 10 days.

## June 2

Dr. & Mrs. Sly came from Princeton and we gave a tea in their honor, to which Dr. DeYoung, Mr. Lee & Limb were invited. Dr. Sly had an appointment made by Dr. Douglas for him to see Sir Robert Samson at the British Embassy at 11 a.m. the following morning.

## June 3

Mr. Youngchin Choy came from New York to attend the meeting of the 4 Committees organized by the Commission.

## June 4

Sae-sun Kim, Chun Chi-sun & some others came in the morning & 6 others from New York came in the afternoon, Dr. Shinn driving his car. The Committee men, 21 in all gathered in the Commission office and completed the organization of the Committees after a dinner at Avignon at 6:30 p.m. The N.Y. & Princeton people went back. In the afternoon Fanie & I went to Mrs. Stotsbury's<sup>450</sup> tea given in Cromwell's<sup>451</sup> birthday party. Dr. Sly telephoned from Princeton saying that Sir Samson was very sympathetic and told him that U.S. Great B. Russia & China are discussing the K. question and the result will be known in a few weeks. Meanwhile Dr. Sly will see Mrs. Roosevelt and Joseph Grew<sup>452</sup>.

## June 9

At 11 a.m. had a talk with Dr. Wei Touming<sup>453</sup>, the Chinese ambassador, who returned from Chungking recently. He said, I met Mr. Tjo-Sowang a long time before leaving Chungking & talked about you. All the government officers and the Chinese people are in favor of Korean independence and recognition of the K.P. Gov. but you know there are some things which should be settled, etc. As I told him about the training of Ks in China, which proposition requires Chinese cooperation, he said he would think it over & see what can be done if I write him about the matter<sup>454</sup>.

I later sent him the letters of the secretary of War, & Joint Chiefs of Staff etc.

450) Lucretia "Eva" Roberts Cromwell Stotesbury was the mother of James Cromwell (below) and the second wife of Edward T. Stotesbury (1849–1938), partner of J.P. Morgan and one of the wealthiest men in the United States.

451) James Henry Roberts Cromwell (1896–1990), an American author and diplomat, was perhaps best known for his marriages to American heiresses of the Dodge and Duke families. Cromwell served as an executive of the Korean-American Council, 1942–44.

452) Joseph Clark Grew (1880–1965), an American diplomat, was the U.S. ambassador to Japan, 1931–42. From May to December 1944, he served as the chief of the Office of Far Eastern Affairs of the State Department. Grew was named the under secretary of state in December 1944.

453) Wei Tao-ming (1899–1978) was the Chinese ambassador to the United States, 1942–46. His name also appears as "Tauming" and "Tao-ming" in subsequent entries.

454) During World War II, Rhee repeatedly sought support from the OSS and the Joint Chiefs of Staff for clandestine Korean operations against the Japanese on the Korean Peninsula. At least two projects, codenamed "Eagle" and "NAPKO", were undertaken, but neither was very successful.

## June 12

At 10 p.m., left for New York,  
Speaking tour in Pennsylvania<sup>455</sup>).

## June 12, 1944

Left Washington at 10 o'clock p.m.

## June 13, 1944

Arrived in New York and stopped at the Pennsylvania Hotel.

At one p.m. had lunch at the Time & Life Building, 66th floor. Mr. Bailey, three had men of Time, Life and Forum Magazines, James Shinn and myself. We discussed the Korean question.

At 6 p.m. we had dinner at the Korean Church and Institute. Bernard Kim and his wife urged me to come to their home.

At 8 p.m. we were at the Christ's Church and many Koreans were there. Mrs. Fitch presided over the meeting at which many Americans were present. The Cuban representative, Miss Tarafa and Dr. and Mrs. Underwood were there. Mrs. Fitch opened the meeting and after introductory remarks, she introduced me. Then Dr. Shinn was introduced as the main speaker. We proceeded to choose officers of the New York chapter of the Korean-American Council. Mrs. Fitch was chosen as Chairman. Then the Underwoods were nominated as treasurers but Dr. Underwood declined by saying, "We are not in a position to accept any position, etc." Dr. Maurice William<sup>456</sup> became Vice Chairman. Rev. John Starr Kim was chosen as secretary of the chapter.

The three officers elected were authorized to choose the treasurer, etc.

455) The following entries for 12-16 June were typed on a separate sheet and placed in the daybook.

456) Maurice William (1881-1973), a dentist and author, was known for his book *A Social Interpretation of History* (1921) that was allegedly instrumental in turning Sun Yat-sen away from Marxism. William did publicity work for both the KPG and the Kuomintang throughout World War II and remained a correspondent of Rhee into the 1960s.

After the close of the meeting, Dr. Underwood took us to the Shaffer's and treated us to refreshments. I came to the hotel after 11 p.m.

## June 14, 1944

At 7 a.m. I got on the train for Trenton, N.J. From there I went to Philipsburg, Pa. arriving about 11 a.m. Rev. Reimer and Mr. Peil were waiting. They took me to the Easton Hotel, Easton, Pa., where I stopped and spoke.

At 12:30 p.m. the joint meeting of various clubs participated in the luncheon in the main dining hall of the hotel where 215 leading citizens of the town met. Dr. Reimer introduced me. I spoke about thirty minutes.

About 3 p.m. Mr. Peil took me to the Country Club where we had a big dinner in the evening. About twenty persons, men and women. After dinner they asked questions and I answered, taking about an hour for the discussion. Afterwards, Mr. Peil and Dr. Reimer drove me to the hotel Bethlehem, where I stayed overnight.

## June 15, 1944

The Kiwanis Club in Bethlehem has its headquarters in the Hotel Bethlehem. Mr. Mumma is the president. At 12:30 p.m. we had lunch. There were about 140 people at the luncheon. Again Dr. Reimer introduced me.

At 3:30 p.m. Mumma took us in his car to the Hotel Americus in Allentown. I stopped in Room 1004. Dr. Reimer stayed with me until evening. He went home at 9 p.m. after having dinner at the hotel with me. I had a good rest overnight. It had been raining and chilly all through to the 16th. Later it became sunny and hot.

## June 16, 1944

At noon the weather began to clear.

The Allentown Rotary Club is a very lively one. The main Tap Room of that hotel is their regular weekly place. The meeting began at 12:15 p.m. Rev. Raker is president of

the Club. Mr. Bentz is the secretary. He brought a box of candies for me. Allentown is the most beautiful town of all the towns up there.

Mr. Miller, editor and owner of the three newspapers, Morning Call, Evening Chronicle and another. He came to the luncheon and returned courtesy to us, as we had stopped at his office the previous day.

After the meeting, Mr. Bentz took us to the Railroad station in Allentown where I took the train for Philadelphia Broad Street Station at 4:30 p.m. By a taxi I reached the 30th Street Station in North Philadelphia. There I took a train at 5:13 p.m. for Washington.

It was a very good train arriving in Washington at 7:30 p.m. Mamie<sup>457</sup>), together with Ruth Hong and Thomas Park, met me at the Union Depot.

[End Speaking Tour]

### June 13

At 8 a.m. arrived in New York and stopped at the hotel Pa. At noon James Shinn and I went to the Radio Center and Mr. Bailey<sup>458</sup>), Henry Luce's secretary met us and took us to the restaurant on the 66th floor of the Life & Time Building and had a luncheon, prepared for us in a special room. Those present were Bailey, 3 representatives of Time, Life and Fortune Magazine and Shinn and myself. We talked about Korea's immediate needs & his position in the postwar program.

Later I asked Bailey to secure an executive secretary for the K.A. Council and ask Mr. Luce to be the national Chairman. He said he would talk it over with Mrs. Fitch.

In the evening we went to the K. Church on their invitation to a K. dinner. I met many Korean friends including Mr. & Mrs. Bernard Kim. After dinner we went to the Christ's Church and many Koreans came later. Dr. Sockman said he had another meeting to attend. A large number of Americans came including Dr. & Mrs. Underwood, Mrs. Fitch

457) "Mamie" (also Mammie and Mami) was a term of endearment that Rhee used for his wife Francesca. She sometimes addressed him as "Papi" in letters.

458) Probably Wesley L. Bailey (c. 1910–1990), a special assistant to Henry Luce, 1937–47.

made the opening remarks & introduced me & I said a few words. James Shinn spoke. Then the officers of the N.Y. chapter of K.A. Council were elected. Mrs. Fitch, Chairman, Dr. Maurice William, Vice Chairman & Dr. John Starr Kim, secretary. Underwood was nominated as treasurer but he declined. Further election of officers was deferred & the officers chosen were authorized to recommend other officers. adjourned. See the other diary for Easton trip.<sup>459</sup>)

### June 20

June 20 at 1 p.m. had lunch with Upton Close<sup>460</sup>), George Marshall<sup>461</sup>), Walter Trohan<sup>462</sup>) & J.J. Williams at the Carlton hotel. Williams arranged it for me to meet Close. Close said he had brought a big package [of] messages from Korea for me in 1919. He would arrange to take dinner with us next time when he comes to Washington.

Trohan is the Chicago Tribune man, who wrote fine articles on Korea.<sup>463</sup>)

### June 21

Appointment at 3 p.m. with Col. Gerhardt at the Pentagon Building.

### June 28

Tea at the Chinese Embassy in honor of Dr. H.H. Kung. Bishop Paul Yu-pin & ambassador Wei Tauming introduced us to H.H. Kung, General Shang-Ching & others. In the

459) See the entry for 12 June 1944.

460) Upton Close was the pen name of Josef Washington Hall (b. 1894). Hall was a prominent American journalist, author, and broadcaster. He was regarded as an authority on East Asian affairs.

461) Not the George Marshall who was then U.S. secretary of state.

462) Walter J. Trohan (1903–2003) was the Washington bureau chief for the *Chicago Daily Tribune*.

463) This last sentence may have been added after 1945. The *Chicago Daily Tribune* did not print any articles by Trohan on Korea until June 1945. Trohan wrote two articles in which Rhee alleged that President Franklin Roosevelt had made a secret agreement at the Yalta Conference to give the Soviet Union an exclusive sphere of influence in Korea. These articles, along with others printed in the *Chicago Daily Tribune*, provided Rhee and the KPG with a great deal of publicity during the final stages of World War II. See Trohan, "Reds to Absorb Korea in Yalta Deal Says Rhee: Charges 'Secret Pact' Among Big Powers", *Chicago Daily Tribune*, 3 June 1945; and Trohan, "Shafer Reveals 'Text of Deal' Involving Korea: Says It Calls for Nation to Stay in 'Soviet Orbit,'" *Chicago Daily Tribune*, 23 June 1945.

evening Bishop Yu-pin 于斌 invited us as his guests to dinner at the Republic—Chinese restaurant—only 4, the Bishop, his aide Dr. Pan & us. He would return to China soon & will come to America again in Jan. or so. He would carry my letter to Tjosowang or any one.

### July 2

Harry Whang came in morning from Detroit and began our conversation with W.S.L.<sup>464</sup> & myself. Later Channing Liem came from Princeton and we had a big lunch at our house. 12 persons present. The main purpose of the meeting was to complete the organization of the Committees. But Harry insisted that unity should be the most essential. Rev. Whang also emphasized the importance of it.

### July 4

As a result of Rev. Whang Sayong's <황사용> efforts to bring about some common understanding between UKC<sup>465</sup> & the Commission, I met in W.S.L.'s house with Warren Kim <김원용>, Jacob Dunn <전경무><sup>466</sup> Yongjung Kim, Harry Whang, W.S.L. & Rev. Whang. I went there at 10:30 and shook hands with them all. Every one spoke of the necessity of unity among various groups. They decided to continue discussion and went to China Inn for lunch given by Ahn Seungwha <안승화>. Ahn and Inez Kong Pai<sup>467</sup> were waiting. After lunch I left & later Lee reported that they came to the Laffayette hotel & resumed the conversation until late afternoon when Harry Whang left for his house in Detroit.

464) Won-soon Lee. Rhee used this abbreviation frequently hereafter.

465) United Korean Committee (UKC, 1941–45), a loose union of nine Korean independence organizations established during the Overseas Korean Conference in Honolulu. The UKC attempted to unite these organizations in support of the KPG, but relations with Rhee and the Korean Commission began to deteriorate in 1942 over what the UKC believed were Rhee's aggressive attacks on the State Department. In June 1944 the UKC established its own diplomatic office, called the Washington Office (워싱턴 외교사무소), in direct competition with the Korean Commission.

466) Kim (1896–1976) and Dunn (1900–1947) were officers of the UKC's Washington Office.

467) Pai (공백순, 1919–1998) came to Washington in 1940 to do publicity work for the Korean Commission, but fell in love with and married Edward Pai (배의환, 1904–2001) of the UKC, causing a break with Rhee. Pai later became an accomplished writer and translator of Korean poetry.

### July 6

Col. Goodfellow<sup>468</sup> returned from the European Front & called me up.

In the evening we went to W.S.L.'s house for dinner with the Staggers family.

### July 12

Had a dinner at the Embassy “the first official dinner” & Col. & Mrs. Goodfellow, Cromwell, Mr. & Mrs. Staggers with their daughter Deloris, ensign<sup>469</sup>, Mr. and Mrs. Williams, Mr. & Mrs. W.S. Lee, Ben Limb and both of us. The Col. said the time has come when things are turning in our favor. Cromwell was to see some of the Marine & Navy heads. But later he decided not to do it and tendered his resignation as Chairman of K.A.C.

Williams saw Dr. Beaudet of the French Embassy, as De Gaule was not here. He had an interesting conversation. See the memorandum<sup>470</sup>.

### July 14

W.S. Lee presented two copies of the UKC demands in typewritten sheets which he had received from Warren Kim. He gave me one & the other to Ben Limb. He wanted us not to make it public as he thinks there may be some changes in their terms. See the original attached hereto<sup>471</sup>.

Jay, John<sup>472</sup> & I had lunch at the Lafayette hotel and agreed to accept Cromwell's resignation as chairman of the K.A. Council.

468) Millard Preston Goodfellow (1892–1973), a journalist and publisher of the *Brooklyn Eagle*, was a high-ranking member of the OSS. He collaborated with Rhee on several efforts to train Korean commandos for insertion into Korea during World War II, including the NAPKO project. After World War II, Goodfellow was sent to Korea as the political adviser to General John R. Hodge of the AMG.

469) Delores Staggers Pecor served as an ensign in the WAVES, a special division of the United States Naval Reserve for women. She later worked for the Red Cross in Masan, Korea.

470) Not extant.

471) Not extant.

472) Jay Jerome Williams and John W. Staggers.

## July 15

Bishop Paul Yu-pin & Dr. Pan, his aide were entertained at a dinner given in his honor at the Embassy.

Jay has an appointment with Col. Goodfellow.

## July 19

Our appeal for military training presented to the U.S. Joint Chiefs of Staff. Col. Goodfellow thinks they will not turn us down this time.

Ben Limb & I want to meet Mr. North 2nd Postmaster General at his office. He was not in but Mr. Black and Mr. \_\_\_\_\_ met us and asked us if it would be agreeable to have the K. flag as the sole emblem of the U.S. stamp. We assented and presented 2 designs of postage stamps drawn up by Koreans. They would said they would have a program when the stamps are ready for use.

## July 24

Dinner given in honor of General Shang chen, head of Chinese Military Mission.  
商震 Shang Chen Gen.

蔡文治 TSAI WEN TCHIH Gen.

田世英 Tien Shih Ying Col.

陳宏振 Chen Hungchen Mr.

李民憲 LEE MIN HSIEN Col.

潘朝英 PAN Chao-ying

## August 1

Left Washington at 9:45 a.m. for New York on the invitation to the World Premier of

the new picture Wilson<sup>473)</sup> at the Roxy theatre. Arrived New York at 2 p.m. and stopped at the Penn. hotel room 1328 C.

9:45 a.m. left Washington. Fany bringing me to the station in our car. Ben Limb also to see me off. Arriving in New York at 2 p.m. Stopped at the Pennsylvania Hotel, Room 1324C. Mr. Smith, Penn Hotel publicity man arranging for the room.

Bruno Shaw came to see me in the afternoon. He asked for material for radio broadcast and also suggested that a film story could be written on Korea.

In the late afternoon Dr. William<sup>474)</sup> and I went to the Rainbow Room of the Radio City where a reception was given by Chinese Consul Dr. Yu in honor of Dr. H.H. Kung. There I met many interesting people both Chinese and American, Ambassador and Mme. Wei, Bishop Yu-pin and many others.

At 8:30 p.m. I went to the Roxy theatre. I entered through the Executive entrance. Miss Young, Mr. Montgomery's secretary sent me the ticket for the Wilson Premiere at Roxy theatre. My seat, No. 104 was right in the center about the 6th or 7th row from the stage, one of the best reserved guest seats. As I was ushered in every body in "D" section looked at me. It was a wonderful picture. Woodrow Wilson as a college professor pushed ahead as University President, New Jersey Governor and then U.S. President. His League of Nations treaty was turned down by the U.S. Senate. Especially Senator Lodge, and he was broken down in health and popularity, resulting in his defeat in the 1920 election.<sup>475)</sup> The picture ended at about 15 minutes to 12 midnight.

Walked back to the hotel and went to bed at 2 a.m. August 2. Had breakfast with Young Chin Choi, David Namkoong, and Sae-sun Kim at the hotel coffee shop. Stopped at the

473) *Wilson*, a 1944 film directed by Darryl F. Zanuck, portrayed Wilson's rise to the presidency of the United States and his struggle to craft a durable peace after World War I. It won five Oscars from the Academy of Motion Picture Arts and Sciences.

474) Maurice William.

475) Wilson did not stand for election in 1920, but the film portrayed the election as a referendum on the League of Nations in which James M. Cox, the Democratic nominee and a proponent of the League, was defeated.

East and West Association 40 E. 49th St. and had a talk with Mr. & Mrs. Welsh.<sup>476)</sup> After that Choi and I took lunch at the coffee shop of the hotel.

Later Mr. Channing Liem came to see me and we had a long talk.

I left New York City at 3:30 p.m. and arrived in Washington at 7:30 p.m.

#### August 2

At 3:30 p.m. left N.Y.C. and arrived in Washington at 7:30 p.m.

#### August 11

Ben Limb asked Mrs. R. & myself & Mrs. Gladys Williams to dinner at the Broadmoor Hotel, as he was ready to leave for the Coast. While we were at the dinner, 4 Chinese walked in. One was Dr. Alfred Sze former Chinese ambassador to U.S. The other was Dr. Tsiang Ting-fu former Chinese ambassador to Russia & two young men, I do not know. The two former ambassadors walked over to me & greeted. Then Tsiang asked me to write a letter to the UNR[R]A<sup>477)</sup> asking them to let the K.C. send its representative to attend the Conf. to be held in Montreal on Sept. 15—not as delegate but as an observer. He said he would support it. So we wrote that letter.

#### August 21

Mr. Dickinson<sup>478)</sup>, assistant diplomatic adviser to UNR[R]A United Nations Relief & Rehabilitation Administration called up and said he has received my letter to the Administration requesting to be permitted to attend the UNR[R]A conference to be held in Montreal on Sept. 15 as observer and they would issue permit for me to send a visiting delegate and rather apologetic by saying that the number of delegates has been increased and

476) Award-winning author Pearl S. Buck (1892–1973), who with her husband, Richard J. Walsh, founded the East and West Association in 1941. The association disseminated knowledge about East Asia to the American public.

477) The United Nations Relief and Rehabilitation Administration.

478) Edwin Dickinson.

lack of seats is a serious problem but if we do not mind they will include us among the nations whose representatives will come as observers. I thanked him & told him that all that we ask is the fairness & justice [be] shown us. He would write letter to that effect & I told him that I would name two delegates to represent K.C.

#### August 27<sup>479)</sup>

Left Washington at 12 p.m. Fanny took me to the Station in our car, arrived in New York at 4:07 p.m. Waldorf Astoria gave me a suite of rooms, 2316-2318, somehow prearranged. James Shinn came to dine with me and then go to the Town Hall, where a large meeting was held in commemoration of the birth of Confucius. Dr. H.H. Kung, some 70th descendent of Confucius spoke. Dr. Chi Meng wired me inviting me to come as honored guest. So I went two days ahead, as originally planned.

#### August 27

The Town Hall meeting began at 8:30 p.m. James Shinn and I went there from the Waldorf Astoria and a lot of Chinese and Americans were pouring in, each one showing a ticket at the entrance.

While I was trying to imagine about how to get a ticket, some one called me from the ticket window. A lady gave me my ticket and advised me to go to the platform with other honored guests.

There young Fitch<sup>480)</sup>, George Fitch's son shook hands and said he came a day or two ago. Then the Chinese ushers led me to the platform. My seat was among the ambassadors, Dr. H.H. Kung, Wendell Willkie<sup>481)</sup> and the president of Oberlin College and of

479) This entry was typed and stapled into the 1944 daybook.

480) Possibly George Kempton Fitch (1913–1972).

481) Willkie (1892–1944), a Republican politician, author, and internationalist, unsuccessfully ran against Franklin Roosevelt for the U.S. presidency in 1940. After his defeat, Willkie became an ally of Roosevelt, promoting key programs such as Lend-Lease Aid and American aid to the United Kingdom prior to the attack at Pearl Harbor. His book *One World was a New York Times* bestseller in 1943.

Canton University were in the speakers line and the next row was for honored guests, Victor Hoo, vice-foreign minister, Dr. Ting-fu Tsiang, Minister Liu, Dr. Hu Shu, Dr. Kon and Wellington Koo who was next to me. On my right was C.K. Li.

The Chinese chorus of about 40 boys and girls gave several pieces. The negro woman singer made a great hit. Dr. Kung did pretty well. Closed about 10:30 p.m.

### August 28

All the morning, I was in the room, excepting a couple of time when I went out for breakfast and also for a little walk.

At 5 p.m. Fannie arrived from Washington. James Shinn had arranged for a radio broadcast through Columbia network. Williams arrived from Washington.

### September 1<sup>482)</sup>

At 11:30 a.m. had a talk with Mr. Joseph Grew at the State Department. During my absence last week George McCune<sup>483)</sup> called up and said "Mr. Grew wanted to see Dr. Rhee". When I returned McCune called up again and made the appointment.

As I walked into the room 374 one of the clerks went in and soon came Mr. Ballantine<sup>484)</sup>. He led me into the other room and Mr. Grew took hold of my hand and said, "it is a great pleasure, etc." I said he was granting me a great privilege to meet him for which I am thankful.

As we were taking seats, Mr. Grew said he hoped I am getting used to Washington summer. I said I lived here long enough to get used to it. He said, he had been to Manila, Rangoon, Shanghai and Tokyo but Washington summer is the hottest. I asked, have you

482) This entry was typed and stapled into the 1944 daybook.

483) George McAfee McCune (1908–1948) was the son of American missionary to Korea George Shannon McCune. McCune was a Korea expert in the Office of Far Eastern Affairs in the State Department.

484) Joseph W. Ballantine (b. 1888), an American diplomat and Japan specialist, was the assistant chief of the Office of Far Eastern Affairs. In December 1944, Ballantine was promoted to chief of the office.

been to Korea to find out what the summer in Seoul was like. He replied, "no, but I hope some day I have the pleasure of visiting you in Seoul" I said, "Ambassador Grew, you can help us to go back to Korea soon. You were in Tokyo for ten years, you know what the Japanese are and how to handle them. When you came back from Japan and told the American public the truth about them we hoped that you would be a great champion for us". He said, "if I can do anything to help you and your people I would be the happiest man. The Cairo declaration has pledged for Korean Independence and all you need is a little more patience."

I said, "yes, our people are grateful for it. But on the other hand the 3 words, 'in due course' can keep us down for another 3 or 4 decades. Why do they not prove their sincerity by giving us some aid or encouragement." [Grew said] "Dr. Rhee, what we have in mind to discuss with you for your own interest is about the two letters you wrote to the Security Conference. Instead of a formal reply, we thought it would be better for you if we personally explain the situation. One letter you wrote was your request to have your representation attend the conference as an observer, therefore that is out of the question.

The other letter concerning the territorial integrity and political sovereignty, you know, the nature of this conference is such that there is no political or territorial question to be raised at all. I think you better withdraw them. They are here and I will give them to you, if you like. If not, they will think you do not know even the nature of the conference." I said, "we are the crying baby in the family of nations. We are singled out and discriminated against and we asked nothing more or less than justice and fairness. We will keep on crying whenever or wherever the big powers get together. A crying baby does not wait for a proper time or a proper place. To cry is the only thing we can do and cry we will. All nations and peoples, some of them whom have no nation to represent are included among the United Nations but Korea the first victim of aggression and the only nation that has been fighting is barred out. Please have a heart and look at us with a little sympathy and a sense of fairness. You ask me to be patient and wait. We have been patiently waiting for the last 40 years since 1905 when President Theodore

Roosevelt secretly made an agreement with Count Katsura<sup>485</sup> and sold Korea to Japan, in an open violation of the treaty agreement<sup>486</sup>. In 1919 President W. Wilson declared the principle of self-determination. The Koreans took it seriously and sacrificed thousands of their lives to prove their determination. But Japan threatened him and he succumbed and appeased Japan by giving her Shantung Peninsula and ignored Korea's appeal for justice.

We knew the clash between the U.S. and Japan was coming and patiently waited that time. The Pearl Harbor attack came and we thought we would get some aid from the U.S. To our sad disappointment, we are the only nation that has been left out and naturally we Koreans and many of our American friends begin to wonder if there is another secret agreement to sell Korea to some other power.”

They seemed to be shocked at the suggestion and he said, you are talking about the past and I said, “yes, we judge the future by the experiences of the past.” Mr. Grew asked me to take the letters back and I said I have to consult my constituents and also that I represent the Korean people and have achieved nothing so far. I must do letter writing and keep the letters in my file so that I can show my people that I have done everything that I should have done and left no stone unturned.

I finally agreed to call up George McCune and make an appointment to see either Mr. Ballantine or Mr. Grew.

### September 5

George McCune called up and asked if I had decided about the letters sent to the Security Conference. I told him that I would let him know the next day. Later I prepared a letter addressed to ambassador Grew stating that in deference to his expressed desire, I would withdraw the two letters etc. An appointment was made for me to see Mr. Ballantine on Thursday the 7th.

485) Katsura Taro (1848–1913) was a three-time Prime Minister of Japan, 1901–6, 1908–11, 1912–13.

486) A reference to the Taft–Katsura Memorandum (1905), which many Koreans believed violated Article I of the Korean–American Treaty of 1882 (officially “Treaty of Peace, Amity, Commerce and Navigation, 1882”).

### September 6

Ben Limb came and we had a quiet talk about his proposed trip to Montreal to attend the UNRRA Conference. Later he called up Dr. Tsiang and Mr. Dickinson & Staggers would see about his passport etc.

### September 7

Warren Kim came at 9 a.m. on an appointment the day before. He told me about [what] he was doing etc. Later Wonsoon came and he began to discuss his plan as he would go to Calif. I told him I could not promise anything but if they could effect a sincere unity at the all K. Conference<sup>487</sup> according to the instruction of the Kopogo<sup>488</sup> I would cooperate.

At 2 p.m. Miss Ungern<sup>489</sup>, Washington representative of the Shanghai Evening Post came for an interview.

### September 8

11 a.m. meeting with Bishop Paul Yu-pin. I gave him a copy of my letter to the Postwar Security Conference which together with another letter asking for permission to send our representation to attend the Conference at Dumbarton Oaks as an observer. Mr. Grew and Mr. Ballantine asked us to withdraw. He will take it to Kim Ku & Tjosowang.

### September 10

At 11:30 a.m. had a talk with Dr. Ting-fu Tsiang at the Broadmoor hotel. He would soon leave for Chungking & will come back in Jan. He will help Kopogo with President Chiang. He asked me to postpone the proposed reception to Jan. when he returns. He would introduce Ben to every delegation and said, “please tell him to let me know if he

487) Factionalism afflicted Koreans in the United States and China throughout World War II. Several “all Korean conferences” were called to unite them, but a lasting unification was never achieved. For a detailed account of the infighting, see Lew, *The Making of the First Korean President*, chap. 9.

488) Shorthand for the Korean Provisional Government.

489) Alix Ungern.

needs money”.

### September 14

Ben Limb left for Montreal on the special train which was carrying most of the delegates that were going to the Conference.

At 11 a.m. had a talk with Dr. Wei Tauming, Chinese ambassador. He would be glad to send to Kopogo my message about Ben Limb's attendance at UNRRA Conference which I prepared in Chinese. I spoke to him about my letter to Secretary Hull<sup>490</sup> a copy of which was mailed to him. He said he saw it but there was no truth in the report that Mr. Hull responded in his press conference that China has agreed not to take up Korea question at the moment. He said no such question could be taken up at Dumbarton Oaks<sup>491</sup>. There is no place for any territorial question at the Security Conference. He suggested we should unite among ourselves<sup>492</sup>.

Later it was reported Jacob Dunn tried to make hotel reservation in Montreal but failed.

It is reported that while Yongjeung Kim was in Calif. some one in State Dept. wired him and he flew back. He secured a pass and went to Montreal that same night.

### September 18

Warren Kim called up & said he was leaving for Los Angeles. He would do all he can to make as satisfactory arrangement as possible & I told him that if they prove sincere in unity problems I will go as far as I can to cooperate with them etc.

He said, the U.K.C. decided to send Yongjeung Kim to the UNRRA Conference. I told him that my only hope was that Kim and Limb may cooperate so that they would be no embarrassment created for Kopogo.

490) Cordell Hull (1871 – 1955) was the U.S. secretary of state, 1933 – 44.

491) A Washington, D.C., estate that was the site of the eponymous conference between Soviet, Chinese, American, and British officials to create a successor to the League of Nations.

492) This paragraph originally appeared in the 7 September 1944 entry with a marginal note indicating that it was part of the entry for 14 September.

### September 19

Appointments:

General Chen Shang—11 a.m.—Munitions Building

Senator William King—1 p.m.—Lafayette Hotel

Had talks with Gen. Shang. It was revealed that Thai Li 戴笠 head of the Chinese F.B.I. in Chungking was against any foreign army operating on Chinese soil. General Ho—候—was another one against helping Korea but has been dismissed recently. Gen. Chu & Col. Hsiao, military attache were taking orders from Thai Li. General Donovan<sup>493</sup> had to go with them.

So I asked Shang to ask Generalissimo to open the way for us by giving his approval for our plan to train between 500 & 1000 Ks in China.<sup>494</sup> He said he would ask Generalissimo immediately. I arranged to have Col. Goodfellow to meet Shang in the afternoon & three of us met at Shang's office. Sent the file of letters relating to the training program.

### September 20

Had a talk with Col. Gerhart<sup>495</sup>. Spoke to him about the renewal of our request for the training of 500 Ks in China. He said we must secure the cooperation of the Chinese Gov.

At 12:30 p.m. had a talk with Ambassador Wei & told him about the training of 500 men. He said he would look into the letters relating to that matter and see what can be done about it & will call me up.

### September 25

The appeal to the U.S. Senate signed by Staggers & Williams came from the printer and we began to mail them to all the members of Congress and also to some 12 or 13

493) William Joseph Donovan (1883 – 1959) was an American soldier and head of the OSS from its creation in 1942 until its termination in 1945.

494) Probably either the NAPKO or Eagle project of the OSS.

495) Possibly the same person identified by Rhee as "Gerhardt" in the entry for 21 June 1944.

hundred daily newspapers.

### September 27

James Shinn and Ben Limb came from N.Y. and we had lunch with them at Lafayette also Staggers & Williams [and] W.S. Lee. Afterward we went to Jay's office and discussed the importance of publicity now during the election campaign. Jay said he wanted 10 or 20 Koreans who would carry placards demanding recognition etc but "if you can not furnish it, I cannot afford to lose any more of my jobs. I lost my airline job which brought me \$50,000 a year". After Staggers and Williams left the room and we three Ks discussed the matter W.S. Lee did not agree to it and said the Ks would raise great opposition to it.

### October 10

Left for New York on 12 o'clock train, Ben Limb driving his car to Union Station and at 4 p.m. arrived in New York. Stopped at Pennsylvania Hotel, room 814. James Shinn came down and we had a little talk in my room. He and I went out for lunch. Later he went to the Hotel Waldorf Astoria to attend the Double-Ten<sup>496</sup> meeting. Dr. William on the air with Chinese Consul-General Yu before the Waldorf Astoria dinner, I did not go.

In the evening Yongchin Choi came and we went out for dinner together. When we returned to my room I spoke to Choi about Ryong-Choon Hahm and persuaded him to support him in his efforts to organize a Korean military unit under the U.S. Army and Navy, which allegedly promised him unofficial lend-lease aid. Hahm had asked Yongchin to work with him. Choi said Hahm had asked him to serve in the U.S. Army as his right-hand man but he refused because he said Hahm can never be truthful.

496) A reference to the National Day of the Republic of China, 10 October, which commemorates the start of the Wuchang Uprising (1911) that ended the Qing Dynasty.

### October 11

At 8:30 a.m. Shinn and Sae-sun Kim came to take breakfast with me at the hotel and I urged them to help Hahm. Sae-sun was opposed to it and we had a lengthy discussion. At length I agreed to drop the matter.

James [Shinn] called up James Farley.<sup>497</sup> He was out. Dr. Philip Lohman, editor of Time magazine, came to see me.

In the afternoon James and I went to see Mr. Thomas J. Watson.<sup>498</sup> He was interested in Korea's resources and raw materials for post-war commercial relation. He called Mr. Hartley(?), his economic expert to interview us. Afterwards, he refused to serve as treasurer of K.A.C.

Watson wrote a letter of introduction for James to see the president of a big bank, Mr. . Afterwards he came out to see us again and I asked him to let us use his name as a treasurer. He refused. When I mentioned the names of our trustees he told James to see him next Monday.

### October 12<sup>499</sup>

At 6:30 p.m., the New York Koreans gave a dinner at the Korean Church Institute<sup>500</sup> in my honor. Sae-sun Kim and James Shinn went with me to the Church and the dinner was prepared in the basement dining room. Helen Yum was there as Mrs. Bernard Kim had invited her to come and surprise me. Dr. & Mrs. Maurice William were also invited. There were about fifteen at the dinner. After dinner, we went upstairs and opened the meeting in the Chapel. Rev. John Starr Kim presided over the meeting some brief remarks he first introduced Dr. William who spoke about 25 minutes on the political situation, the communist problem and international injustice, etc. After that I was introduced

497) Probably James Aloysius Farley (1888–1976), an influential New York politician and former Postmaster General.

498) Thomas John Watson, Sr. (1874–1956) was the CEO of International Business Machines (IBM), 1914–56.

499) This entry was typed and stapled into the 1944 daybook.

500) Officially the "Korean Methodist Church and Institute" (뉴욕한인교회).

and I told them that I was criticized for being unwilling to cooperate with others but I accepted everyone the Korean Commission recommended to me to be on the Committees. I would like to know what I should do to cooperate. Reorganization of the Commission as ordered by Kopogo must be carried out, right or wrong. I had already announced through the Commission bulletin more than once that the Commission would abide by any program of reorganization if all the organizations meet at the Conference called by the Commission and agree on it. We did not hold the Conference because KNA did not concur. Now the Kopogo has ordered it and we welcome it. If you all get together and agree on a reorganization plan agreeable to all, I will follow it and step aside to make room for anyone they choose to fill my place.

About Communism, just as the Chinese Nationalist party controls the Chinese Govt., the Korean Independent party, the nationalists are running Kopogo. Both Govts. are confronted with the Communist problems. If we do not settle this question now we will have this problem carried into Korea. The danger of foreign interference through that connection will be inevitable. What we should do now. We must be doing something now during the election campaign. I suggest that you New York Koreans decide to form a delegation representing all Korean societies to go to Washington in a body and present a memorial to the President, etc.

When I got through speaking, they moved and seconded in favor of doing it and it was unanimously resolved to do it. They set the date as October 26th.

#### October 13

Came back from New York. At 11 a.m. I had a talk with Mr. S. Stanwood Menken<sup>501</sup> at his Wall Street office. He will write me a letter which I may send to Kopogo recommending Menken as our legal counselor. He also agreed to start organizing the directors

<sup>501</sup> Solomon Stanwood Menken (1870–1954).

of the K.A.C.

In the afternoon I had a talk with Bishop McIntyre<sup>502</sup>.

When I returned to the hotel Choi came and we took dinner at the hotel and packed and checked out.

By 7:30 p.m. I left New York and reached Washington at 11:30 p.m.

#### October 14

Dinner at Mr. W.S. Lee's for Colonel and Mrs. Goodfellow.

#### October 16

Dinner at Mr. Lee's—present were Dr. & Mrs. Koon, Dr. Becker<sup>503</sup>.

#### October 17

Dinner with Mr. R.C. Hahm, Dr. Kim.

#### October 18

10 a.m. United Nations Interim Commission of Food and Agriculture—Secretary, Dr. Piquet<sup>504</sup>—Far Eastern Section, Dr. Shiman<sup>505</sup>.

#### October 20

Guest speaker at luncheon, Washington Hotel of Knights of Round Table.

<sup>502</sup> James Francis McIntyre (1886–1979) was the auxiliary bishop of New York, 1940–46, serving under Archbishop of New York Francis Spellman.

<sup>503</sup> Probably Arthur Lynn Becker (1879–1978), a missionary to Korea and wartime consultant to the OSS.

<sup>504</sup> Howard S. Piquet, an economist and former professor at Princeton.

<sup>505</sup> Russell G. Shiman was a member of the Far Eastern Section of the United Nations Interim Commission on Food and Agriculture. He was also a member of the Institute of Pacific Relations. Shiman edited the *Far Eastern Survey* for several years.

## October 21

12 noon Mr. Knollenberg<sup>506</sup> at Col. Goodfellow's office.

## October 23

4 p.m. Col. Goodfellow.

## November 7 †

Spoke at Collectors Club, Branch 5, Society of Philatelic Americans, William P. Stuart, Program Chairman.

## November 8

Spoke at Washington Philatelic Society, Lee Sheraton Hotel, 8, p.m., Albert F. Konze, president.

## November 9

Appointment with Ambassador Tao-ming Wei at the Chinese Embassy—11 a.m.

## November 13

At the Commission meeting I showed Mr. Lee & Dr. DeYoung the Kopogo cable refusing to accept UKC election of Commission members etc. Lee suggested we send list of men acceptable to us to Kopogo. I told Lee & DeYoung to send the list. Lee's suggestion I okeyed as follows:

[Organization]	[Location]	[Individual]
民團	Hawaii	閔燦鎬

<sup>506</sup> Possibly Bernhard Knollenberg (1892–1973), a division deputy in the OSS.

國民會	Hawaii	金元容 or 田京武
	California	金乎
學生會		張基亨
同志會		鄭翰景 李元淳

[Translation]

Mindan Hawaii Min Chan-ho

Kukmin-hoe (KNA)	Hawaii	Kim Won-yong or Jeon Kyeong-mu
	California	Kim Ho

Hakseang-hoe	Jang Gi-hyeong <sup>507</sup>
--------------	-------------------------------

Dongji-hoe	Henry Chung [and] Wonsoon Lee
------------	-------------------------------

Ben Limb had a talk with Jacob Dunn who told him that he would work for me loyally if I would let him, etc.

## November 16

Appointment at 2 p.m. with Miss Constance Hook, friend of Dr. Maurice William. Connected with "The Cooperator", New York.

## November 17

Fany & I were invited to the 20th anniversary dinner given in honor of Dr. F.B. Harris<sup>508</sup> at the Foundry Church at 7 p.m. The Dramatic Hall was filled with guests about a hundred in number. The speakers table was occupied by bishops and ministers of vari-

<sup>507</sup> Jang (장기형, Key Hyung Chang), a Methodist minister from Los Angeles who was allied with Haan Kilsoo's Sino-Korean People's League.

<sup>508</sup> Frederick Brown Harris (1883–1970), a Methodist minister, was the longest-serving U.S. Senate chaplain, 1942–47, 1949–69, and a chairman of the Korean-American Council. Harris was the pastor of Foundry Methodist Church, Washington, D.C., 1924–55. The church's membership included many prominent American politicians. Rhee regularly attended Foundry when in Washington. Harris was selected as Eisenhower's representative at Rhee's third inauguration in 1956.

ous churches with Chief Justice Murphy<sup>509</sup>) and Vice President<sup>510</sup>) and Mrs. Wallace in the center. We were sitting at the first table in front of the speakers table, sitting with us Dr. & Mrs. Edward, etc.

Dr. Harris mentioned among the honor guests, the Australian and Czech ambassadors, Dr. S.R. the first president of the P.G. of the Republic of K. & the issuance of U.S. postage stamp honoring Korea etc.

#### November 20

Appointment with Monsignor Carroll, National Catholics Welfare Conference, at 3:30 p.m.

#### November 21

Spoke at the Centenary Methodist Church, Richmond, Virginia at the invitation of Rev. J.J. Rives, pastor of the church. Accompanied by Col. Ben C. Limb, Mrs. Gladys Williams and daughter and Miss Ruth Hong.

#### November 22

Mr. Bowles from the Civil Service Commission called to inquire about Rev. Whang.

#### November 25

Mr. Y.C. Choi came from New York and had dinner with us.

#### November 26

Captain Thomas Min called.

<sup>509</sup>) William Francis Murphy (1890–1949) was an associate justice of the U.S. Supreme Court, 1940–49. He never served as chief justice.

<sup>510</sup>) Henry Agard Wallace (1888–1965), 33rd vice-president of the United States.

#### November 28

Appointment with Mr. Falconer from the Post Office Department to investigate our complaint made through Mr. Staggers about someone intercepting our mail.

#### December 15

At the Commission Meeting Dr. DeYoung, Won Soon Lee were present and later Ben Limb also. The 3 following items were decided:

(1) To send letters to eight appointees, writing them to come to a consultation meeting in the Commission office on Jan. 10.

(2) Dr. DeYoung to attend the I.P.R<sup>511</sup>). Conference at Hot Springs [Virginia] on Jan. 5. He said it had been arranged for 3 men, Jacob Dunn, Ilhan New & Dr. DeYoung to attend it as representatives of the Korean people. DeYoung said he would manage the travelling expenses if we pay him [unreadable] his salary for Dec. & Jan.

(3) To issue 3 things:

A. Identification cards (we have them)

B. Badges.

C. Car stickers as requested by Los Angeles Dongji.

Lunch with Mr. Bain & told Mrs. Williams to go home on holidays and stay there.

#### December 16

Left for New York on 9:30 o'clock train, Fanie drove me to the station at 9 but the train was not ready until half an hour later. Arrived in Trenton 12:45 p.m. one hour late in schedule time<sup>512</sup>).

Arrived in Princeton at 2 p.m. Walked to the Nassau Tavern and there was no room but they promised to get one ready at 4 p.m. Had lunch at the Tavern and went out. Had a haircut and walked to Twenty, Nassau, Street. Had a talk with Dr. Sly. He said

<sup>511</sup>) The Institute of Pacific Relations.

<sup>512</sup>) The remainder of the entry for 16 December was typed and stapled into the 1944 daybook.

he had, "neglected me but not forgotten me." He had done something for us, the training of Korean technicians for postwar work in Korea. A Princeton Committee organized consisting of Einstein, Cohen, Myers, Carpenter, Sly, etc. He wanted to come down to Washington in January.

After the visit I walked down Nassau Street and dropped in to see Miss Slayback at her house, 164 Nassau St. She got me in telephone contact with Mr. Liem who came to see me at the Tavern. He came back to take dinner with me and we talked in my room after dinner until 10 p.m. He asked me to take dinner at his house at noon Sunday so I accepted the invitation.

#### December 17

I got up at 8 a.m. (Room 208). Had a good sleep and felt fine in the morning. It is sunny and a little cold but nice. Had breakfast and took a walk. When I came back read newspapers until Mr. Liem came at 11 o'clock.

Liem and I went to the University chapel and attended the morning services. After that we walked over to his house where Mrs. Liem had prepared a chicken dinner for us. We did a good deal of talking until after 2 p.m. We had to walk to the station for the 2:30 p.m. train for New York.

Arrived in New York at 3:30 p.m. and the Commodore Hotel gave me a small room on the first floor, #164.

Took the subway to Namkoong's place and had a big chicken dinner. Sae-Sun Kim came and we talked over various things. Returned to the Hotel at 10:30 p.m. Had a good rest.

#### December 18<sup>513)</sup>

Youngchin Choi came and we walked to 39th Street (1 East 39th) Maryknoll Headquar-

513) This entry was typed and stapled into the 1944 daybook.

ters. Father Carroll<sup>514)</sup> met us and led us to a 3rd floor room where we met Fathers Connors<sup>515)</sup> and Cleary<sup>516)</sup>, all who spent many years in Korea. They showed me two Catholic newspapers which printed some articles on Korea by Gilbert<sup>517)</sup>. I did most of the talking. I told them we would like to reorganize K.A.C. amalgamating it with the C.F. of K<sup>518)</sup>. We must have a big man to be the Chairman. They said Hoover<sup>519)</sup> would be fine. I said some one who knows the Red danger and will not hesitate to voice his sentiment. If we cannot get Hoover, a man like former ambassador Bullitt<sup>520)</sup> would be fine. They all thought so too. I said also that we would like Father Carroll to serve as an executive secretary for the beginning because at present we have no one to devote their whole time to the work. Then I explained that at the beginning Mrs. Rhee and Mrs. Summerfield did all the work and scrapped every dollar they could to meet the expenses. But when John Myers of Ashland [Ohio] gave us a check for \$1000.00, I turned it over to Staggers with the request that he employ an executive secretary to take care of the work. We employed someone but she did not make good. We dismissed her and the money left on hand was about \$400 or \$500. Then Mrs. Williams came from Canton, Ohio to serve as an executive secretary. She could not make much headway and she will resign because she will be married in May. With the little sum on hand now, we cannot hire an employee and therefore, we want Father Carroll to take up the book until we build it up, etc.

They said they have been instructed by the Superior General to organize a Catholic Friends of Korea and bring the Korean question before the American people. So Carroll will devote his time to that work after the New Year's Day. The Catholic Friends should be a part of the K.A.C. and Christian Friends may also be a part of it. But they have to

514) Probably Msgr. George Carroll, who served as a chaplain with U.S. Forces during the Korean War and was named Vicar of Pyongyang in 1950.

515) Probably Fr. Joseph William Connors.

516) Probably Fr. Patrick H. Cleary.

517) Possibly Prentiss Bailey Gilbert.

518) The Christian Friends of Korea.

519) Probably Herbert Clark Hoover (1874–1964), 31st president of the United States.

520) William Christian Bullitt, Jr. (1891–1967).

have a little time to think it over and will let me know.

It was about 12 p.m. and Choi and I took them all to a Chinese restaurant for lunch. Choi and I returned to the Hotel.

At about 4 p.m., Dr. Kaufmann came and took me over to Staten Island where I was to speak at the High School. Kaufmann apologized for the small audience, etc. but he said the audience is a group of highly intellectual people, as they are all high school teachers, etc.

Later there were only two people, one man and one lady who came but they all said the day announced was Dec. 28th and not 18th. I talked to them a little while then they asked questions and we got up. Mrs. Larsen took us in her auto and brought us to the Ferry. When we landed in South Ferry, Kaufmann took the Westside subway and I took the Eastside. When I came back to the Hotel it was after 7 and James Shinn was waiting in my room.

We had dinner at the Chinese Village. Ben, James, William and myself. William kept us waiting long. After dinner I returned to my hotel to meet Mr. Pai<sup>521</sup> and John Kimm. They did not come until 11 p.m. So I went to bed and turned the light off. At 11:20 they came and I let them talk for a while. They left after 12:20 a.m. and I had a hard time to get to sleep. A poor night.

#### December 18

Spoke on “Rebirth of Korea.”

#### December 19

Ray Doyle, publicity director of the Commodore wanted to get in touch with me. He wanted me to broadcast an interview at 5:45 p.m. So I changed my plans to leave Washington at 6:30 p.m. instead of 2:30 p.m.

<sup>521</sup> Edward Pai (배익환, 1904–2001) was a member of the UKC and the husband of Inez Kong Pai. He would serve as the ROK’s ambassador to Japan, 1961–64.

Miss Chisler of the United Press came for an interview and Doyle arranged for us to us[e] Rm 700. We met her here and James and I answered her questions.

We had the broadcast on the mezzanine floor. After that Ben, James & Choi took me in a taxi to Pa. station where I took the 6:30 train.

#### December 22

Dr. Shinn came from New York.

#### December 25

Christmas Dinner at Wardman Park Hotel with eighteen guests. Tea afterwards for<sup>522</sup>

#### December 28

Luncheon—Guests were Minister Liu Chieh, Chinese Embassy and Dr. \_\_\_\_\_ Chiang.

#### December 30

Naps in bed—Afternoon reading at Sulgrave Club Alice Sze—Dr. & Mrs. Sze’s daughter.<sup>523</sup>

#### December 31

Philip & [unreadable], Hahm & Dr. Rim called.

In bed with bad cold.

Col & Mrs Goodfellow & daughter called.

<sup>522</sup> This entry was never completed.

<sup>523</sup> The daughter of Alfred Sao-ke Sze (施肇基, 1877–1958), who served as the Chinese envoy to the United States, 1920–29, 1933–35, and then as ambassador, 1935–36.

---

## Abbreviations

AMG	American Military Government
IPR	Institute of Pacific Relations
K.A.C.	Korean-American Council
KAI	Korean Affairs Institute
KNA	Korean National Association
KPG	Korean Provisional Government
OSS	Office of Strategic Services
ROK	Republic of Korea
SRI	Syngman Rhee Institute
SUNY	State University of New York
UKC	United Korean Commission
UNRRA	United Nations Relief and Rehabilitation Agency
YMCA	Young Men's Christian Association
YWCA	Young Women's Christian Association

---

## Appendices

Contained in Rhee's diary were several documents that were either stapled, paper-clipped, or simply placed between the pages. Most of these documents were elaborations on entries already recorded and have been transcribed and placed in their appropriate locations. One such document, a copy of a speech that Rhee wrote commemorating the U.S. Postal Service's creation of a Korean stamp for inclusion in its "Overrun Countries Series" in late 1943 has been removed from the diary and will be published with the full collection of Rhee's pre-1945 speeches at SRI. The remaining documents have been reproduced as appendices here.

Appendix 1, "A Record of the dates of trips made by S. Rhee Since Nov. 1904", records the dates of Rhee's major trips from 1904 until his return to Seoul in 1945. It also includes his approximate attendance dates at George Washington, Princeton, and Harvard universities, although it erroneously suggests that he received his M.A. from Harvard in August 1908, instead of 23 February 1910 as he recorded in his diary. While this list is thorough, it is not exhaustive. Rhee's 1913 tours of the Hawaiian Islands, investigating the conditions of Korean immigrants there, and his 9,000-mile tour of the United States in 1933 are not recorded.

Appendix 2, "How Long Have I been in the United States up to date, Dec. 3, 1940?", accounts for his years in exile in the United States, subtracting his lengthy trips to Korea, China, and Europe. His total of 33 years and one month as of 3 December 1940, rose to nearly 37 years by the time of his return to Seoul in 1945.

Appendix 3 is a letter of introduction written on Rhee's behalf by missionary James S. Gale in November 1904. Rhee carried more than a dozen letters of introduction from missionaries in Korea with him to the United States in 1904. These letters were transcribed and Rhee possibly intended them to be included with the typescript of his logbooks. On the first (unnumbered) page of the typescript a few centered lines of text state "Some

---

of the Letters of Introduction Written in 1904", although none of the letters were bound with the other pages of the typescript. Transcripts of the nineteen surviving letters of introduction were included in Lew Young-ick, ed., *The Syngman Rhee Correspondence in English*, 4:1–42.

---

## Appendix 1

### A Record of the dates of trips made by S. Rhee Since Nov. 1904

- 1904, Nov. 04, Left Seoul on the way to the United States, aboard the steamship Ohio, and reached Kobe on Nov. 10.
- 18, Left Kobe aboard S.S. Siberia and reached Yokohama on the 19. Traveled on steerage with Korean immigrants to Honolulu.
- 20, Left Yokohama and reach Honolulu on 29. Rev. P.K. Yoon, Pastor of K. Methodist Church in Honolulu, Dr. John Wadman, Superintendent of M.E. Mission, and other friends met me and took me out (to the) Ewa plantation where I was intertained by some 200 Koreans.
- 30, Sailed for the coast.
- Dec. 06, Arrived at San Francisco on steamship Siberia.
- 26, Left Los Angeles for Washington, D.C. by Santa Fe R.R.
- 31, Reached Washington, D.C. at 7 p.m.
- 1905, Jan. --
- 1907, Jun. Attended George Washington University. Received A.B. degree.
- 1907, Sept. --
- 1908, Au reached Honolulu on the 7th.
- 1924, Jan. 23, Sailed from Honolulu on S.S. Maui and landed in San Francisco on the 29th.
- 31, Left San Francisco on S.S. Venezuela for New York via Panama Canal, making many stops on the way.
- Mar. 06, Landed in Baltimore, Md. and went to Washington, D.C.
- Oct. 25, Left Los Angeles aboard S.S. Calawai and came to Honolulu on Nov. 1st.

---

1929, Oct. 05, Sailed on S.S. City of Honolulu and landed in Los Angeles on the 11th. Visited Chicago, New York, Washington, D.C. Butte, Montana, and other cities.

1930, Jan. 02, Sailed from Los Angeles on S.S. The City of Los Angeles, and came back to Honolulu on the 8th.

1931, Nov. 21, Left Honolulu on S.S. Los Angeles and arrived in Los Angeles on March 27th.

1932, Dec. 23, Sailed from New York for Liverpool on S.S. Laconia, Cunard Line, and

1933, Jan. 02, Landed in Liverpool, England.

04, Left London by plane, after stopping at Paris and changing the plane at Lyon, France, landed in Geneva in the afternoon.

1933, Jan. --- Lived in Geneva, and made occasional visits at Paris, Zurich and other cities.

Jul. 04, Left Geneva and went to London, where the London Economic Conference was being held at that time. From there, a tour to Paris, Warsaw, Moscow, Rome, Milan, Nice and other cities including Vienna was made.

Aug. 10, Sailed from Nice on S.S. Rex, Italian Line, for New York. It was the voyage on which the Rex made the record-breaking speed, and arrived in New York on the 16th.

1935, Jan. 19, Sailed with Mrs. Rhee from Los Angeles on S.S. Malolo and arrived in Honolulu on Jan. 24, 1935.

1939, Mar. 30, Left Honolulu via S.S. Empress of Japan for States - to open up Korean Commission in Washington.

Aug. 10, Sailed with Mrs. Rhee on the S.S. Matsonia for Honolulu.

Nov. 17, Sailed on S.S. Lurline for Los Angeles.

1945, Oct. 04, Left Washington D.C. National Airport at 9 pm.  
9 pm

---

Oct. 08, Left Hamilton Airfield Cal.

Oct. 12, Arrived Atsuki Airfield at 11.10 am.

Oct. 16, Left Tokyo at 4 am. Reached Atsuki Airfield at 6 am, took off at 7:30 am for Korea.

Oct. 16, Arrived Kimpo Airdrome at 12 noon.

## Appendix 2

How Long Have I Been in the United States up to date, Dec. 3, 1940?

Arrived in San Francisco on Dec. 6, 1904, Excluding the years spent abroad, it is a total of 36 years.

The Years Spent Abroad.

Sept. 3, 1910, left for Europe and April 26, 1912, arrived in Seattle, a total of one year and eight months.

Nov. 16, 1920, left Honolulu for China and June 29, 1921, returned to Honolulu, a total of seven months and half.

Dec. 23, 1932, left New York for Geneva, Aug. 16, 1933 returned to New York, a total of seven and half months.

	year	mon
Sept. 3, 1910-Apr. 26, 1912	1,	8,
Nov. 16, 1920-Jun. 28, 1921		7½
Dec. 23, 1932-Aug. 16, 1933		7½
	2,	11.

or 2 years and 11 months.

Out of 36 years in U.S.	36,	
Spent abroad	2,	11.
Actual time in U.S.	33,	01.

## Appendix 3

To Christian Friends in Washington, D.C. and other parts of America:

This will introduce to the reader Mr. S. M. Lee (or Rhee), (or Yi) a Korean born in Seoul in 1875. He was well educated according to the old methods of Chinese scholarship, but early feeling the insufficiency of this for the present age of the world he bent his energies to the study of English and other branches that lay open to him through the Chinese. He believed in independence, and not only that Korea should be independent but that the Korean people should awaken from their torpor and think and live. He started a daily paper, the Mai Il Shin Mun (Daily News) first, and later the Che Kwok Shin Mun (The Empire) which contained translations from English and in them he preached ideas of liberty. This was contrary to the conservative government and they had Mr. Lee arrested in September, 1897 and for seven years he lay in prison.

For seven months he wore the Cangue, a wooden collar weighing twenty pounds or more and during this time, to add to his agony, he sat with his both feet in the stocks. He saw his companions taken out beaten, tortured, hanged, and beheaded. He knows all the sensations that go with the heavy thud of the sabres on the execution ground, which fate he fully expected for his own. More than once the morning papers announced, "It is reported that S. M. Lee was beheaded in the night." He walked too, in the coolie gang with a heavy iron chain fastened over his shoulders and padlocked at the back—all because he claimed the right of popular assembly where he and his companions might meet for debate conference and mutual improvement.

He had heard the gospel before going to prison but only in his agony and loneliness did he learn to trust. He performed that most difficult of all acts for mankind, namely, he renounced himself and gave his heart to God, and then set to work to see his fellow prisoners saved. He had a library started in prison, a library of Chinese publications from Shanghai, and work went on.

Among those converted through Mr. Lee's efforts were a Mr. Yee Sang Ja (Chai), Secretary to the first Legation to Washington; a Mr. Yee Wun Gung, one of the most noted scholars in Korea, specially mentioned in literary work of the last century; and Mr. Kim Chung Sik, who was at the head of the Police in 1895 and 1896. There are many others, some forty in all, who have been touched by his persistent earnest efforts.

He was tried and sentenced to life imprisonment at hard labor and 100 blows, and last summer (1904) on August 9 he was pardoned and set free. He can tell a wonderful tale, all true to life, of the sorrows of the yellow man. May he find many good friends among his white brethren in the free land of America, and during the [three] years that he proposed to spend there in study, observation and writing, may he be cheered and helped and sent back to do a great work for his people.

He is altogether worthy of friends for he is a gentleman born a scholar and a Christian whom God has used.

James. S. Gale

Author of Korean "The Van-guard", 16 years in Korea. Seoul, November 2nd, 1904.  
(A pamphlet accompanied)

## 「색인」

### [A]

Agence Korea - 180, 188, 205, 261  
Ahn Chang ho - 89, 99, 107  
Ahn Hen-keng - 77, 83, 88  
Ahn Jung Soo - 26  
Ahn Won kiu - 138  
Appenzeller - 71, 166  
Avison - 44

### [B]

Bak Yil Kiu - 90  
Baik Nam Chil - 121  
Baik Nam Hoon (백남훈) - 60  
Britain - 203, 276  
Bureau Interparliament - 181

### [C]

Chairman (노정일) - 61  
Chandler - 109  
Chang Duk Soo - 230, 232, 248  
Chang Kee Young - 201, 232, 236  
Chi pum Hong - 122  
Choi Eung Sun - 123, 124  
Choi S.H. - 23  
Choi Yi Sang - 57  
Chosen Christian College - 28, 44, 156, 244  
Christian Lange - 181, 195  
Clemenceau - 96

### [D]

David Lee - 90  
Dolph - 91, 120, 178  
Dongah Daily - 184  
Dongji Investment Company - 136, 141, 152, 161, 220

### [E]

Epworth League - 34, 39, 40, 42, 46, 55, 64

### [G]

Gandhi - 208  
George McCune - 288, 290  
George Whang - 90, 91, 228

### [H]

Haan Kilsoo - 273, 274, 299  
Hamilton - 160  
Hardie - 23  
Harris - 299  
Harvard University - 54  
Henry Appenzeller - 166  
Henry Kim - 142  
Herbert Miller - 155  
Homer B. Hulbert - 44, 159, 248  
Hoo Chi Tsai - 193, 195, 197, 198, 200  
Hornbeck - 160, 249, 250, 253  
Hugh H. Cynn - 118  
Hulbert - 44, 109  
Hur Jung - 127  
Hyun soon - 97

[J]

Jaisohn - 32, 75, 94, 95, 97, 98, 101, 102, 127, 131, 133, 148, 159, 252  
Japanese Y.M.C.A. - 59  
Jessie Wilson - 65, 66

[K]

Kang Yung so - 112  
Kim Chang ho - 67  
Kim Chong Lim - 123, 239  
Kim Chung Chin - 122, 124, 146, 154  
Kim Gay bong - 106  
Kim Kiu sic <김규식> - 113  
Kim Ku - 10, 141, 267, 291  
Kim Sung Ki - 84, 135, 220  
Kim Young Woo - 85  
Kim Yung Sup <김영섭> - 110  
Korean Commission - 11, 32, 90, 93, 97, 101, 113, 120, 131, 140, 142, 148, 156, 157, 201, 230, 234, 238, 246, 272, 275, 282, 296, 306, 310  
Korean Congress - 95, 111  
Korean Nationalist Party Dongji hoi in Honolulu - 183  
Korean Provisional Government - 60, 114, 172  
Kuo Min Tang - 231  
Kyoto - 59

[L]

League of the Friends of Korea - 203, 247  
Lee Chong Kwan - 85  
Lee Y.C. <이응직> - 121

Life and Forum Magazines - 278  
Lim Chung Koo - 123  
Los Angeles Times - 152, 240  
Low Palin <노백린>  
Lytton report - 175, 181, 182, 183, 186, 188, 190,

[M]

Manchukuo - 175, 179, 181, 182, 183, 187, 188,  
Min - 76, 299  
Min Pyng soo - 120  
Min Yung Whi - 94  
Moon Yang Mok - 122, 124  
Moscow - 160, 202, 204, 206, 208, 209, 211, 213, 214, 215, 217, 218, 219

[N]

Nanking - 115  
Namkoong - 131, 132, 157, 158, 230, 232, 245, 250, 251, 256, 265, 274, 285, 302  
National Congress of India - 207  
Noble - 64, 72, 93  
Nodie - 111, 252  
N.Y. Herald Tribune - 178  
N.Y. Times - 167, 185

[O]

Oh Ki Sun - 110  
Oliver - 273

[P]

Paik Man soon - 126  
Pan-Indian Congress - 208  
Park Ho Ken - 125  
Park Kil moon - 126  
Park S.H. - 77  
Park <봉래> - 93  
Park Yong Man - 67, 70, 92  
Patel - 207  
Peter Chang - 115  
Preliminary Peace Conference at Paris - 89  
President of Korean Republic - 173  
Princeton Seminary - 45, 47, 48, 67, 271  
Princeton University - 57, 272

[R]

Reimer E.F. - 73  
Rey - 84  
Rhee Syngman - 199

[S]

Salisbury - 160  
Schofield book - 157  
Severance - 44, 45  
Sherwood Eddy - 68  
Shimonoseki - 23, 57, 59  
Shincil - 111  
Song Yang Whan - 92  
Starks - 65, 75, 80, 81, 83, 111, 132,  
Stimson - 160, 185

Sun Yat - 212, 257, 269

[T]

Taisanah - 31, 36, 37,  
Theodore Roosevelt - 25, 44, 234, 289  
Tokyo - 59, 60, 61, 62, 288  
the Cairo declaration - 264, 266, 276, 289  
the Institute of Pacific Relations - 171, 261, 297, 301  
the K.A. Council - 266, 268, 280  
the Korean Independent party - 296  
the Korean Legation - 28  
the Korean Young Men's Christian Association - 59  
the Methodist Quadrennial conference - 59  
the Peace conference - 96  
the Y.M.C.A. - 33, 42, 48, 58, 60, 62, 63, 65, 67, 71, 72, 145  
the Y.M.C.A. Secretary for Korea - 33

[U]

UKC - 282, 283, 298  
Underwood - 28, 43, 44, 45, 269, 278, 280, 281  
Union Christian College - 244  
UNRRA - 273, 291, 292

[W]

Wilcox - 69, 70, 97, 99  
William Borthwick - 113  
Woodrow Wilson - 285

---

[Y]

Yoon Byung hi - 92

Yoon - 25

You chan Yang - 106

Young Women's Christian Temperance - 40

[기]

길선주 - 97

김경준 - 140, 153

김도연 - 147

김승제(金承濟) - 76

김정식(金貞植) - 61

김종철 - 147, 149

김형순 - 146, 259

[미]

민규식 - 94

민충식(閔忠植) - 61

[비]

박처후(朴處厚) - 76

박희성 - 122, 150

[시]

손병희 - 97

송필만 - 149

신익희(申翼熙) - 116

신형호 - 109

[이]

안승화 - 147, 148, 282

안영렬 - 122

여운형 - 114

유억겸 - 156

윤치영 - 147, 148, 149, 156, 253

이극노 - 141

이범녕 - 91

이살음 - 146, 259

이순기 - 90, 145, 146

이용선 - 93

이창규 - 129, 151

이훈구 - 147, 148

임병직 - 101, 109

[지]

장인명 - 93

장택상 - 93

조용은 - 60

[한자]

張鵬 - 114

大東旅館 - 115

韓國總統 - 197

## 이승만 영문 일기

2015년 10월 16일 발행

2015년 10월 16일 1쇄

**지 음** 이승만  
**공 편** 류석춘, 오영섭, 데이빗 필즈, 한지은  
**발행인** 김왕식  
**발행처** 대한민국역사박물관  
03141 서울특별시 종로구 세종대로 198  
(02) 3703-9200 / [www.much.go.kr](http://www.much.go.kr)

**디자인·제작** 북마크 (02) 325-3691  
**총판 및 유통** 정부간행물판매센터

**ISBN** 979-89-98443-93-1 (94900)

**발간등록번호** 11-1371480-000098-01

©대한민국역사박물관

책값은 뒤표지에 있습니다.

인지는 생략합니다.